

187









3169-1B

ETC 13494

The profitable use of gardening

by

Thomas Hill

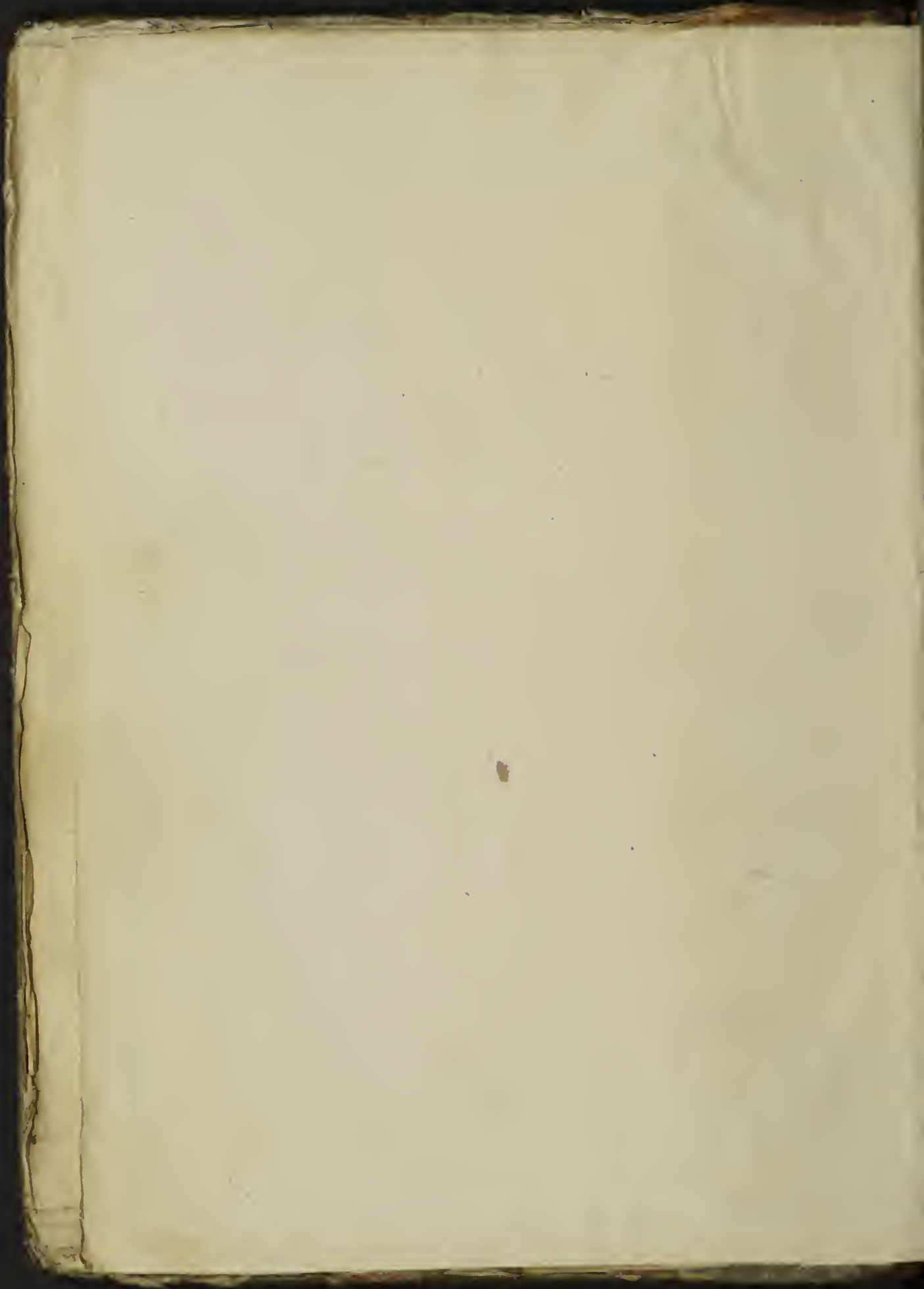
1579

X 111 v 12 mark,

RC 52

1923

5  
10/11





## *The Epistle.*

Dioclesian, through the delight and pleasure he toke therein (as vvriteth Aelius Spartianus) after he had reigned, xviii. yeares, left for a season the vvhole gouernement & rule of the Empire, and forsaking the Court, vvente into a meane house, hauing a garden adioyning thereto, vvhich he vvith his proper hands, both sovved, set, and vveeded the hearbes of his Garden, vvich kind of life so pleased him, that hardly he vvvas intreated to take vpō him again the gouernemēt of the Empire, so much did this quiet life and beautie of the garden please him. This example may moue all other meanner men to haue the like felicitie and pleasure in gardening, seeing so noble an Emperoure chose rather to forsake hys regall authoritie & povver, and still to continue in that state of quiet life, affirming it a far better & happier estate to liue quietly amōg the faire & pleasant floures of the gardē, than to rule, & be daily called on and troubled, vvith the serious & vvaighty affayres of the Empire. But heere I vvill stay my pen, least I seeme ouer tedious vnto youre vvorship in so small a treatise, desiring your goodnesse to pardon my bold attempt, and rather to behold the earnest zeale and affection of my vvilling mind born tovvardes you, thā to cōsider the simplenesse of the stile, and vvante of eloquence. I should haue bin ashamed (right vvorshipful sir) to haue vētured so farre, as to dedicate this my thirde increase vnto your goodnesse, vvhere it not that the argumēt of the matter is both profitable & pleasant to be read, vvherin is taught a number of vvorthy secretes, in the sovving and setting of the most plants, vvith the great commodities they serue for, in the vse of Phisicke: And vvhere it not againe, that I fully persuade my selfe, that youre vvorship vvill rather accepte the mind of the vvryter, than the maner of vvriting. Thus praying almightie God, to send your vvorship long health, and theyeares of the vvorthy Nestor.

*Yours most humble Thomas Hyll.*

*The Preface to the reader and diligent tra-  
uayler in the Arte of Gardening.*



**T**hemeth (louing Reader) not without reason, which *M. Te: ent. us Varro* writeth, that the auncient Philo-  
sophers named the earth, the mother of al plants and  
crescent things: and the like bestowed about the do-  
ing and dressing of it, to be an exercise both vertuous  
and profitable. VVhiche the auncient Romanes, and  
diligent Husbandmen did well obserue, in that they from time to time  
did so paynefully labour, and with as greate care sought busily out the  
vnderstanding and knowledge, not onely of euery kinde of earth, but  
how to digge, dung, orderly dresse, and cast into square and euen beds  
euery ground: and after the same (they diligētly) learned the apt times  
which were most conuenient to sowe or plante in, according to the in-  
crease and decrease of the Moone, with the aspects of the Moone vnto  
such Planets, as most aptly serue vnto the same. VVhen the seedes were  
thus orderly sowed, and somewhat come vp, then they throughly lear-  
ned that the often weeding and watering of the yong plants, did cause  
them the faster to come vp. And in such places where the plantes grew  
thicke together, they by their painefull industrie learned to sette them  
thinner, to the end they might the better increase and waxe bigger. And  
besides these, they carefully laboured, and diligently sought out al such  
meanes, that might happely expell and destroy the most kind of vene-  
mous and harmefull beastes, wormes, flyes, and such like, that cōmon-  
ly annoy and eat vp the seedes and yong plantes comming vp. And as  
their diligence, great cares, and painefull trauayles bestowed in the arte  
of Gardening, deserued of all men worthy commendation, so I vpō this  
occasion, thinke it not much digressing frō the purpose, to set forth this  
treatise of mine, now the third time increased, to whiche I haue added  
such profitable and pleasant matter, as I found written either in the I-  
talian or Latine tongue, that intreated of this arte, whose names of the  
most of them do after appeare, digested into the forme of a Table. And  
besides these, I haue adioyned sundry pleasant secretes, and the neces-  
sarie commodities also, which most of the herbes serue vnto in the vse  
of Phisicke, which now I haue performed in such sort, as the like hither-  
to hath not bin published in the English tongue, and for recompēce of  
my industrie, I craue no other of thee (gētle reader) but his friendly re-  
porting

## The Preface.

porting of this Treatise: the same if I may vnderstande, shall encourage me shortly to publish the other profitable part belonging partly to this, whiche onely teacheth the perfit order of planting and graffing of the most trees now in vse with vs, with the proper secrets taught in the doing and ordering of them, matter right profitable to be vnderstanded. But in the meane time, loke for a proper treatise ioined to this of Gardening which hath to name the husbandmáns cōiectures, vitering therein the right profitable notes, not only of the cōdition of the yeare, but other husbandly instructiōs, seruing necessarily to the vse and defence of the cattell, with the speciall gouernment to be followed in each moneth throughout the yeare, for the preservation of health, and diuers other instructions right profitable to be vnderstanded: vnto which besides, is annexed a right pleasant Treatise, and that profitable, of the maruellous gouernment, order, and vsage of the Bees, with the greate commodity by hauing them in a Garden, both of their hony and waxe, and after their hony and waxe so had, to what vse they may be applied, as well in phisicke for the health of body, as also in Surgerie, and this especially, after the distilling of eyther of them, whiche rare secrets shall more at large appeare by the perusing of the treatise. And thys haue I rather ioined to my Booke of Gardening, for that the honey Bees (after the mind of the auncient Gardeners) be so apte a furniture, and that profitable in a Garden. Also looke for a treatise of mine, being in a readinesse with the Printer, and intituled, certayne pleasant probleames with other apt answers, teaching fruitfull lessons for the preservation of health, with other philosophicall demaunds, and their learned answers; vitering such vnknowne matter, as hitherto hath not bin published in the English tongue, gathered firste by a learned Cardinall and Philosopher named *Ferdinandus Ponzettus*, out of the Arabians, Greekes, and auncient Phisitions in the Latin tongue, and now englished by me for the commoditie of many. Also sundry other treatises be in a like readynesse, with other of the Printers, whose names and titles I haue heere omitted or rather ouerpassed for tediousnesse to the Reader. Thus leauing (gentle Reader) to trouble you further, I commit you to God, wishing only your gentle fauour to further these my rude attempts.

*Et feliciter vale.*

## A friend to the Reader.

**B**y tract of time things most obscure are manifested playne:  
In time the drie and hardned flint, is pearst with droppes of rayne.  
By time we wy, time leades our life, by time we do possesse:  
In time we haue that we desire, each thing both more and lesse.  
Such time of right deserues to haue, more prayse than zongue can tell:  
In time let Hyll receyue reward, that hath begon so well.  
Experience plast in wit profound, in time hath made to yeelde  
To him that whilom captiue was, a conquest of the fielde.  
VVith paynefull penne the wrighter, hath exprest in English playne,  
The needefull ayde and mightie force, that doth in hearbes remayne.  
The time to plant, the time to set, the time to rayse agayne,  
This man by treble diligence, hath brought to light with payne.  
Of things that were so high of price, this authour by his skill,  
Hath brought such plentie, that each wight may haue thereof his fill.  
For which this Authour askes no good, nor gaine of glistering glee:  
He couets no vayne glorious prayse, as you may easly see.  
His quaking quill hath forced more, a good report to haue,  
A light reward, a small returne, this Authour seemes to craue.  
VVherefore yong man or aged Syre, else whosoever thou be:  
That by misuenture or by will, shall chaunce this Booke to see,  
Let cankred enuie meete for hell, abandon euery sense:  
And rather graunt to saue than spill, to help than worke offence.  
Yeeld thou due prayse to him that meant thee nothing to offend,  
So shalt thou see and well perceyue, whereto this worke doth tend.  
So shalt thou know the good from yll, the right from wrong discern:  
So shall thy verdict framed, force, the writer more to learne.

Our father FINIS. wich art  
in heaven

# THE FIRST BOOKE

teacheth the skilful ordering and  
care to be bestovved on Gardens, with  
necessarie helpes, defenses, and Secretes.

¶ What three poyntes are to be learned of euerye Gardener  
minding to haue a fruitfull Garden: the health that may be  
recovered by walking in the same: and the commoditie of  
Gardens placed neare to the Citie. Cap. j.



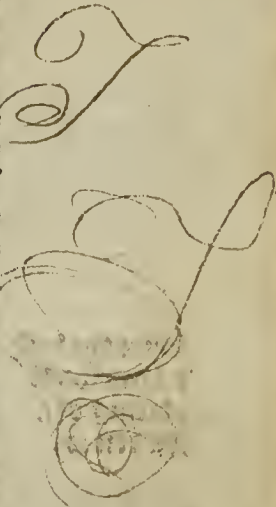
¶ Seeing a fruitfull and pleasaunt Gar-  
den can not be had without y<sup>e</sup> good skyl  
and diligent minde of the Gardener (or  
master of the ground) neyther can any  
profite arysse by Gardening, without  
costte and charges therein bestowrd:  
neyther perfectlye can it be attayned  
vnto without Art, instructing the due  
reasons of the yeare. It is therefore

more, that these things be first cared for, provided and knowen,  
which being done, the Gardener is made perfect, delectable, and  
profitable: and we then receiue by it two special commodities:  
The first is, profit, which riseth through y<sup>e</sup> increase of hearbes  
and floures: the other is, pleasure, very delectable through the  
delight of walkyng in the same, whiche both giueth health to  
mans body, and recouerie of strength after long sicknesse, by  
commoditie of taking the freshe ayre and swete smell of the  
floures in the same. And of these two Varro & Palladius wyl,  
y<sup>e</sup> Gardens be placed neare to the Citie, both for the comoditie  
of these herbes & rootes seruing to Physicke, as al other herbes  
and floures, which be profitable for the Citie: Seeing that Gar-  
dens placed far from the Citie, do rather hinder the apt byn-  
ging of al kinds of hearbes and floures vnto the market to be  
solde. And for this doth Cato commend greatly that ground or  
farme place whiche is nigh situated to the Citie: In whiche  
ground, also be set little trees and plants to beare by vines, and

C.

that

Charles  
Tonsend



What manner  
of master or  
Gardener a  
fruitfull Gar-  
den requireth.

Utilitie and  
pleasure in-  
sucth of wel-  
dressed Gar-  
dens.

why Gar-  
dens ought to  
be nere hand.

that Willowes and Others be set in watrie and wette places neare to riuers, and that the ground besides hath moyst & watrie places or springs in it: whereas be Orchards also in mooste fruitful and open places, and that well dunged, in the which all kinds of fruite may be set and planted. Place neare to y<sup>e</sup> citie (sayth Cato) many and sundry kinds of Gardens, set & decked with all kinds of pleasant floures, all rotes that be rounde, the swete Myrtle tree, & many other necessarie things of like sort, to be set & sown. But a gardē (& especially for pot herbes) must be moyst of it selfe, or else easie to be watered, for fertilitie sake.

¶ Of the standing of Gardens, the water necessarie to them, & of the properties of the ground, with the qualitie & temperatenes of the ayre, & conditiō besides of the windes. Cap. ij.

Wher the best  
& laudablest  
placing of a  
garden is.

And now, to the scituation and standyng of a Garden. The most commodious and profitablest placing of a Garden is, as Palladius sayth, that y<sup>e</sup> same be neare to a plaine field, somewhat lying aslope, and hauing through it small courses of water running as by certaine distances one frō the other through the Garden. But yet beware y<sup>e</sup> these be not ouer great courses, for that the easie and smal courses be moze commodious. And this diligently wey, that better is a little ground of yēld, being wel dressed and laboured, than a large ground, hauing no painfull labour bestowed in it at all.

What com-  
ditie it is to  
haue a wel in  
a Garden.

And further vnderstand, that to haue a wel in a Garden, is right necessarie, excepte the same maye otherwise be watered with some Conduite, or small streame running by, or else be very neare vnto a running water, for water is a gret nourisher to herbes. But if there be no well nor swete water running by, then must you digge a pit, although the same wil be very labourous, to drawe water thereout, in that a Garden of necessitie ought to be ofte watered, through which (as Plinie writeth) it causeth the sēdes sown, the sooner to spring vp, spread abroad, and to be the moze plentiful. And therefore if you be minded to haue a well or pitte that should continue with water in it, the as (Columella teacheth) you must cause the same to be digged

A secreete to  
cause water  
long to conti-  
nue in either  
pit or wel.

when

When the Sunne is in the last part of Virgo, whiche is in the moneth of September, befoze the Equinoctial Haruest, or entring of the Sunne into Libra: For at that season, do men especially try and finde out, what force and vertue the welles then haue: at what time the ground thzough the long Drought of Summer, is then depriued both of moysture and raine. But if you cannot well dig a pit, then make a little pond or Cisterne (as Palladius teacheth) vnder the ground, wherby the rain falling al the winter may run therunto, and by that meanes you may wel water your gardē in the hote sōmer. And if now you lacke all these meanes befoze taught, for the watering of your Garden, then shal you dig and make the beds of the Garden in most drie places, thzē or foure foote deeper and lower, that the bankes about thereof being hard made together, may so kēpe in the water, which ordered on this wise, doth well defende the drinesse therof, for that in time of the great Drought, it is by that meanes watered, and the yong and small plants, be therby the better procured to spring faster vp.

A secrete for  
dry Gardens.

But if the Garden be ouerclōped with water, then dig after thy discretiōn deepe gutters here & there in the Garden, wherby the water falling into them, may be so led into some deepe pit in the end of the Garden, made for that onely purpose. And consider that in the ground and farne places, bordering neare vnto the Citie, the Gardens and Orchards, should and oughte to be nearest the house, and both wel digged, & turned in with dung, thzough the which fatning they may the aptlier spring & plentifullier grow. And yet beware y you make not your gardē neare vnto either Barne, Stable, or hay loft, so nigh as you can, least the chaffe & dust, both of the corne & hay, blown abzod by the winde, fall vpon the herbes, & so by cleauing on, pearce thzough the leaues, which so pearced, do by and by after burne them, as writeth Florentinus in his instruction of husbandrye. And besides, the harde clinging and gathering together of such strawes and dust of hay blowen abzode by the winde in the gardē, doth so cause a great annoyance, both vnto y herbes & plants growing therein. And further take hēde, that the ayze

A secrete in the  
conueying of  
the water or  
uercharging  
the ground.

Chaffe and  
dust, be very  
hurtful to  
Gardens.

What annoy-  
ance the Wa-  
pours of skin-  
king ditches  
do the cause.

How a Gar-  
den in colde  
Countreys  
ought to lie.

How in hote  
Countryes  
a Garden  
ought most  
aptly to stand

about the Garden be not euill, and infected with the Wapours of ditches and stinking puddles, standing neare vnto it, for that these do not only infecte and corrupte the plantes, but dul mens spirites by walking therein. And in consideration hereof, you shall vnderstand, that euery ayze, which is some colde after the Sunne be set, and some hote after the Sunne be risen, is bothe subtile & holefome: But that ayze which is contrary to thys, is, and worketh the contrarie. And besides, the ayze most to be refrayned, is that, which wryngeth and byndeth hard the harte, and doth make straight the attraction of ayze.

And as concerning the temperatenesse of the ayze, & holefomnesse of the place, a Garden in colde countries and places, ought to haue the free skie or firmament open toward the East, or towards the South part, especially if the same be in suche a Garden or Orchard, that hath yong plants or trees set in it, taking heed, least that by any great hygh hyl, standing between it and those partes of heauen, it be so excluded from the comforte and ayde of those two parts, and so eyther through the North, where (to vs) the Sunne is farthest off, or the late sunne shining of the West, where the Sun only shineth at hys going downe, the plants, seedes, and sets, be so nipped and destroyed with the colde so long veying them.

But if thou canst (sayth Cato) let thy Garden be at the foote of an hyl, and that it beholdeth or lyeth open to the South part, in some holefome place, and that the hil defendeth the sharpe colde of the Northside, that might otherwise nippe and harne the plants and settes comming vp.

But in hote countries, let the faces of Gardens be looking or lying open to the North part, which not only is more profitable, but also pleasaunter and commodiouser to health. And a marishe ground is euer more to be refused, howsoeuer the same be, especially if it lye open towarde the South or Weste part, and that customably in the Sommer the same be throughlye dreyed vpp: whiche so engendereth the Pestilence, and diuerse noy some and hurtfull beastes, that greatlye harne Gardens.

And



And consider also the nature of the Hote standing about, or y<sup>e</sup> water running by youre Garden, whether the same sendeth or vapoureth forth (for the moze parte) anye noysome or stinking ayre, whiche might so annoy you, or the settes, hearbes, and plants: For suche is the proprietie of manye little riuers. And therfoze where any such like is, dyesse or plant no Garden nere vnto the same.

The qualitie of Hotes about Gardens are to be considered.

And last, the winds are to be considered, for that y<sup>e</sup> south winds be hote and moist, and the North windes colde and drie, and the East windes be betwene hotnesse and coldenesse temperate, yet dryer than the West windes. And the East winds generally be alwayes hotter than the West, and yet the West windes be some what moyster than the East.

The qualitie of the faire windes.

¶ Of the consideration and choosing out of good & excellent grounde, and the knowledge of euerye earth. Cap. iij.

And there is much to be considered besides those things whiche we haue hitherto spoken of, in the nature and goodnesse of a ground, if so be you desire to knowe a fruitfull, profitable, and a battle ground: For euery grounde doth not kindlye bring by Garden Hearbes. And therfoze after the minde of the auncient husbandmen, you shall consider in this maner, by taking a clod of the same earth in your hand, and marking whether the same be white and bare, or leane with sande, without anye mixture of earth: either all chalke, or naughtie and filthie sande or grauell, or drie barren greate grauell, or stony barren and glittering dust, or if it be saltie or bitter, or continually wette and moist. For all these be right noyous and great defaultes and incommodities, contrarie to a fruitfull ground.

The nature & goodnesse of euery ground ought to be knowne.

And you shall also trie a rotten clod if the same be almoste blacke and able ynough to couer it selfe with his owne grasse, and of sundry coloures: Whiche if it be thin or mouldie, muste be fastned and brought together by fatte earth mired therwyth. But nowe you shall knowe a fatte grounde, if you take a small clod, and sprinckle the same with swete water, and so kneade it, whiche, if the same be clammye and sticke to your fingers, then

The triall of gardē ground.

How ye maye knowe a good maye ground.

The tryall of  
sweete earth  
fyt for Gar-  
dens.

may ye be out of doubt, that it is fat earth. Also dig a furrow, & fill the same againe with earth, whiche if the earth dothe after gape or open, then is it a slender and leane ground, but if it reacheth oute, then is it a fatte grounde. And that also is a meane ground, whiche doth gape but little. And thys ground also must be swæte, whiche you shall easily try out by taste thereof, if that oute of a parte of the ground, which most you mislike, you take a clodde, putting the same into an earthen pan, and moistning it with fresh and swæte water, into which dip your finger, and so tast on your tongue how it relletheth and sauoureth, for by that shall you knowe the swætnesse of the same.

What earth is  
meestest for  
Gardens.

And that ground also is thought to be best for Gardens, whiche in the Sommer is neyther drye, nor clayie, nor sandie, nor rough, nor through the heate of Sommer full of chappes. For that the ground, which is so dry in the Sommer, doth perishe all such seeds and plants sowne or set therein, or else maketh them shote up very small and slender: and the clayie ground bindeth too harde, throughe the heate of the Sunne: and the sandie and roughe ground worke contrarype to the other, in that they neyther nourishe the young plantes, nor keepe the water any time, falling on them. And to be shoyte, you muste euermoze chouse a fatte and lose grounde, whiche needeth but small labour, and yeldeth also plentifullest and greatest fruite. But that grounde is most to be refused, which is dry and thicke, and bothe leane & colde. And among all kinde of groundes, the chalkie and redde ground are most to be refused. And of this (Varro) doth commend that ground, which of it selfe being gentle & pliable, bringeth forth Maluortys, otherwoyse named Danwortys. And that ground also doth Columella commend, which naturally bringeth forth of his owne accorde, bothe Elmes; and wilde young springs, and those trees, whither they be Slowe trees, or Bullas trees, & Wilding or Crab trees. And on suche wise is a fruitfull

A fatte and  
lose ground,  
is beste com-  
mended for  
Gardens.

The triall of  
a fruitfull  
ground.

Any grounde  
by dunging  
may be made  
fruitfull.

grounde tryed out and knowen by such things, which the same bringeth forth, by the onclpe doing of nature. And yet euerye ground at times conueniēt, may by the dunging, be made moze fruitfull and plentifullor, or bigger yelding.

¶ How a Garden may diuers wayes be fenced and inclosed:  
the maner & secrete of making a lively and strong hedge.  
Cap. iiii.

¶ When you haue thus chosen an apt and fitte plat of ground,  
to digge a Garden in, then must you in handsome manner,  
casting the vtter compasse of it (as either foure square, rounde,  
or otherwise) enclose the same rounde about, and beset and fense  
it throughout befoze you goe about to dresse it vp, or solue anye  
thing in the same. For that Gardens being not well fenced and  
closed aboute befoze the sowing and setting of anye thing in the  
same, be manye wayes endamaged, as well by beastes, as by  
thēues, breaking into them.

And there be many and sundry sortes of fencing and closing  
in of Gardens, as after shall appeare. As first, Varro nameth or  
cōteth that a naturall enclosure, which is set about with yong  
trees or Thornes, hauing in it y<sup>e</sup> rootes of a quicke hedge, which  
we call a Quicke set Hedge, so y<sup>e</sup> the same shal not be in danger  
of y<sup>e</sup> wanton wayfaring mans firebrand passing by, although he  
shoulde put fire to it. And that is named a wilde and rude inclo-  
sure, whiche either is made of rude and shrubbed woodde, or of  
Willowe, or bushes hauing no life, whiche we name a Deade  
Hedge. And in olde time, the Romanes vsed to enclose and fense  
their Gardens with stakes and lathes, set very thicke in order,  
and with small rodde watled in togither, or else by boaring  
large holes through great stocks of trees, through which railles  
or great poales might runne two togither, or thre togither, and  
and so then raise and fasten a board along, or stocks of trees or  
such like things, which maner we now name paling, when the  
same is done with boarde. And that fencing, of the auncient au-  
thours, is named a warlike inclosure, which is framed like to y<sup>e</sup>  
which y<sup>e</sup> soldiors make as a defense about their Tents, & such a  
one vsed to be made neare cōmon high waies, or by riuers, that  
the Garden, mighte not be endamaged by beastes, thēues, nor  
land floudes. And for this cause the auncient men framed thys  
on this wise: as first, a conuenient and apt ditch or trench was

caste

How a garding my diuers

caste by and made about the Garden or field, that it might so receive all the raine water falling thereabouts. And it had also a ridge or slope passage in it, that the water mighte the frailer passe from the bottome. And there was besides an high heape of earthe on the inside nexte joyning to the ditch byncke, so drie and harde, that a man coulde not easily climbe or passe over it.

Also there were certaine, which made suche keepe steps without any ditch, whiche they named walles. And they of olde time also, named that a builded inclosure, whiche was made of dyve stones or slate laid one vpon another, and that in diuers soymes. For either the same was made with clay and stones, workmanly and finely built (in those places specially) by whiche quarres of stone were nere vnto, or of suche as were of abilitie to gette stozz otherwise. And either they made their inclosure of baked or unbaked bricke, or with earth and stones mozttered together, and framed like to the walles of an house.

The profit & commoditie of a lively and strong hedge.

But the profitablest hedge of all (especially in the fields) and leaste of cosse, is that whiche is made with byars and thornes mixed or set together, for this hedge or inclosure will endure an infinite time. And therefore this hedge (of the auncient husbandmen) was moste commended: For that, the same was well knowen to them, that the Byar woulde not lightly perishe and decay, unlesse the same had bene plucked up by the rootes: And after the iniurie also of the fire, it both reneweth and springeth the better.

The manner of erecting of a lively hedge.

And this kinde of hedge, was easily and wittily made on this manner: First Democritus willet, and the like Columella, and Palladius, to gather the seedes of the greatest Bzemles in due season of the yeare, and the seedes of the white Thorne, named the wilde Eglantine Byar, because in nature they agree alike, and those seedes with seedes of the Bzemles (being throughly ripe) they will, to be mixed with the meale of Tares, sprinkled and tempered together with water, vnto the thicknesse of honye. And after that, they will this kinde of mixture to be laide in albe byrune ropes, or other olde ship-ropes, or in some other unloosed cordes of ropes, that the seedes laide in the ropes,

And in the place rounde aboute, where the hedge shal ruine, they will two furlongs to be eared or digged vpp, as thre fote asunder, and a fote and a halfe deep: and this they wil to be done in the end of the Equinoctial of the haruest, when as the ground is well moistned with shoures.

Columella  
willeth after  
the Ides of  
Februarie.

And they wil also that those furrows so lye all y winter thorough, open and vncouered: In pzeparing the Seedes in a readinesse to solue, against the time.

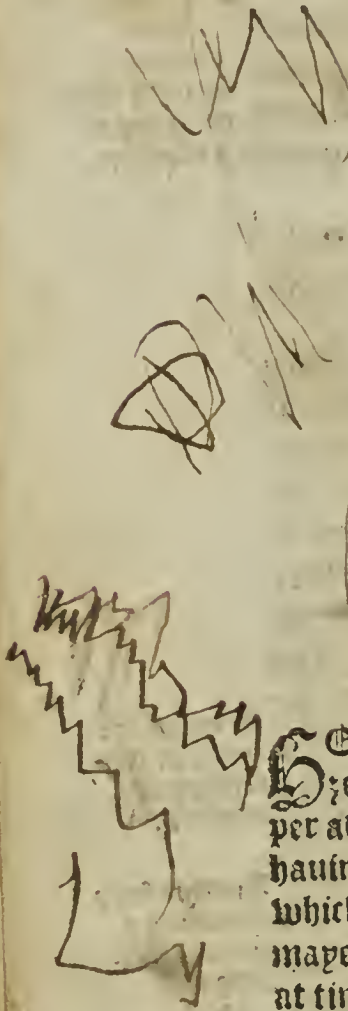
And after that, in the ende of the moneth of Februarie, they will to lay the saide roapes at length in the furrows, and to couer them so lying in the furrowes with thinne and light earth, and to water the Seedes againe, if neede of the season shall so require: whiche they will so to be ordered, in that these seedes of the Thornes, cannot otherwise shote vpp and growe, if they were oermuche couered with earthe: as this day they wil not to be done when the wind bloweth out of the Southweast. And so within thirtie daies after, doe the Thornes shote vp, whiche by pzeatie, helps and shozte pzos, ought to be directed, that shooting vp further, they may so supply the void spaces to make the hedge thicke and strong. And other also made a quicke sette hedge on this wise: Firste they plante young Elder trees, thre fote asunder, and they take the Bzemles and wilde Byar, and put them in long lumps of clay or earth, and set them here and there betwene the Elder trees, couering them orderlye with earthe: and in the comming vp of the pong plants, they digge about and water them, if need so require. And within thre yerres after, the hedge will well defend out both thiefe and beast. But after the thre yeares growth, the auntient husbandmen wil, y this hedge shoulde be burnt euery yeare once, for that by the burning, they shote out and ware stiffer, harder, and sharper. And to conclude, this is an vniuersall waye, and the surest manner, to enclose all Gardens.

A wittle se:  
create in the  
fencing of a  
Garden.

Another way  
of making a  
quicke sette  
hedge.

D.

Of



Here by the way (gentle Reader) I do place two proper Mazes, the one before this chapter, and the other after, as proper adornments vpon pleasure to a Garden, that who so liketh, hauing suche room in their Garden, may place the one of these, which liketh them best, in that void place of the Garden that maye beste be spared, for the onely purpose, to spoete them in at times, which Mazes being workmanly handled by the Gardener, shal muche beautifie them, in couding four suady fruits to be placed in each of the corners of the Maze, and in the middle of it, a proper Herber decked with Roses, or else some faire tree of Rosemary, or other fruits, at the discretion of the Gardener.

The apte times of digging and dressing the ground for euery seaso

Of the dung and dunging of Gardens, with the digging, dressing, keuelling & disposing of the quarters and beds.  
Cap. vi.

As so muche as in the Harvest and Spring time, be many things sowne in the Garden, therefore it behoueth to dig vp, dung, and labor that part of the ground in the Spring time, which you intend to sowe in the Harvest, that the same may serue

serue all the winter throughe. And those partes of the Garden which you intend to sow in the Spring time, that they maye bring forth their fruite in the Sommer, those partes applye and turne vp towarde the North. And this shall you so digge and dresse, when as the earth shall not be ouer moiste nor drie.

And that ground also, which you will haue in a readinesse to sowe in the Haruest, must be turned vp in the moneth of May, whereby the heate of the Sunne all the Sommer throughe, may so bzeake and lose the cloddes, and burne or wither the rootes of the hearbes left in the earth.



And after that, the quarters and beddes of the Garden, be thus finely ordered and tourned in with dung, & sown also for the winter, then in the colde winter season, before the yong plants be come vp, they must be defended and nourished with dung (as by sprinkling it on the beds) that it may the better defende the yong plants from the superfluous cold, & corrupting in the deep of winter. But the ground which you wil sow in the Springtime, must be digged vp in the Haruest, about the Calends of Nouember: and you shall let it lye digged vp after the Haruest, to be burnt and consumed by the colde and sharp hoarte frostes.

For like as in Sommer, the heat of the Sunne doth scath and parch the ground, euen so doth the bitterness of the cold vnlesse

the same into small parts.

Note, that good dung maketh a good ground the better, and greatly aueneth an il crth. How the dung ought to be ordered.

And after the winter is ended, then must that part of the garden be dunged. So that when the time of sowing is nere at hand, then that place of the Garden five daies befoze, shall be weeded, stoned, and dunged againe, and after that digged againe, and with the diligent and often digging, so turned by, that the earth and dung be well mixed together, and not to lye all together at the rotes of the plants, but that first, the earth be thin cast, and after the dung, and then the earth againe to couer the same.

The worthinesse of dūgs.

For by that meanes shall neither the yong plants be burned, nor the heate of the dung hastily breath forth.

Asses best commended.

And the best and worthiest for this purpose, is Asses dung, because it bringeth by leaste weedes: and the next to this, is the dung of Kine, Oxen, Horses, Sheepe, and Goates, so that it be

Next Kine. Oxen, Sheepe, horses, goats.

not aboue a yeare olde, harde, and drie, the whiche also hath his full strength, and bringeth vpper leaste weedes: for if the dung shal be older, it profiteth nothing, for that it is lesse of strength, and yet in Gardens the new dung being three daies olde, shall well suffice and serue the turne. But that whiche men make, although it be thought most excellent, yet is it not so needfull to be desired, vnlesse that eyther the ground be barraine, grauelly, or a moste loose sande, hauing no strength or force in it, whiche so being, needeth the greater helpe of nourishment in the dunging. And the swines dung is thought very il, for that the same is hote. Also the Pigeons and Doves dung is most hote.

New dung is vnprofitable for Gardens

Swines, Pigeons, and Doves dung beste for potted hearbes.

And yet ashes to dung with, is thought very good, and especially for potted hearbes, being finely sifted, the whiche for his naturall heate, doth not only refresh the earth, but slayeth and driueth away all Flies, and all kind of wormes, Snailles, and suche like beasts that annoy the hearbs.

And the like, in a maner, doth the Pigeons dung, so that the same be scattered like seeds on the ground, wherby to season the ground the better, and not on heapes, like the laying of the Ox or horse dung.

And this also conceyue, that a watery Garden grounde needeth more dunging: and a dry ground the lesse dunging. And be-



And these, you may dung your grauelly ground with chalk, if so be you can get no cattels dung, and the like a chalkie or ouer thick ground, you may dung with grauel, for the lacke of other dung. And by that meanes, such Garden grounds be not onely made battle and good of yealde, but become also beautifull, as writeth Columella.

What to be done in the lack of dung.

And Plinie writeth, that when you dung your Garden, let the winde then blow out of the West, and the spone decreasing of light, & dry that season so nigh as you can. For by that meanes, doth the ground yealde the plentifulter.

What to be obserued in dunging the Gardens.

And now after the new digging and turning by agayne, about the middle of Januarie, the Gardē must then be garnished with herbers, befoze the quarters and beds be cast out & deuised. And you may make the herbers, either straight rüning by, or else vaulted or close ouer the heade like to the vine herbers now a dayes made.

And if they be made with Juniper woodde, you neede to re-  
paire nothing thereof for ten yeres after. But if they be made with willow poles, then must you new reaire the euey thre yeare after. And he which will set Roses to run along aboute his herber, or beds round about his herber, must sette them in Februarie.

Juniper poles best commended for the building of herbers.

And the beds of Roses be commonly set in a most short furrow, or be placed by alleys, round about the Garden, whether ye sette them in slips, or sow them in the seedes. And Palladius writeth, that we may not thinke those to be the seedes of the Rose, whiche growe in the middle of the floure, in colour like to the gold: but that the seedes be in that which is like to a smal peare in the vpper end of the stalke.

How Roses ought to be set.

Which the seedes be in the Rose.

And the seedes be then ripe to be gathered, when the Grapes be full ripe, which ripenesse of them by their fuskish or browne colour, and by their softnesse may be knowen. And in the lyke maner you maye do, if you wil sowe that sweete tree or floure named Facemine, Rosemarie, or the Pomegranate seedes, vnllesse you had rather decke your herbers comeliet with vines. And when the herbers be set and made about the walke of the

Dig,

Garden

Walkes and alleys be necessarie in a garden.

Garden, then the ground newe digged, muste be diuided into borders and beds, leauing apart that rowme and space, whiche you will bestowe vpon walkes and bordering alleys: the walkes alleyes and walkes you shall sitte ouer with the finest sode, least by raine and shoures, the earth should cleane and clag on your fete. And this done, you shall leuel your beds and borders, of a height and bredth, by a line layde out, wherby the wæders maye the easilier reach to the middle of the beds, to wæde the herbes.

Why þe beds ought to be leuelled eue of a bredth.

What length and bredth Palladius willethe the beds to be.

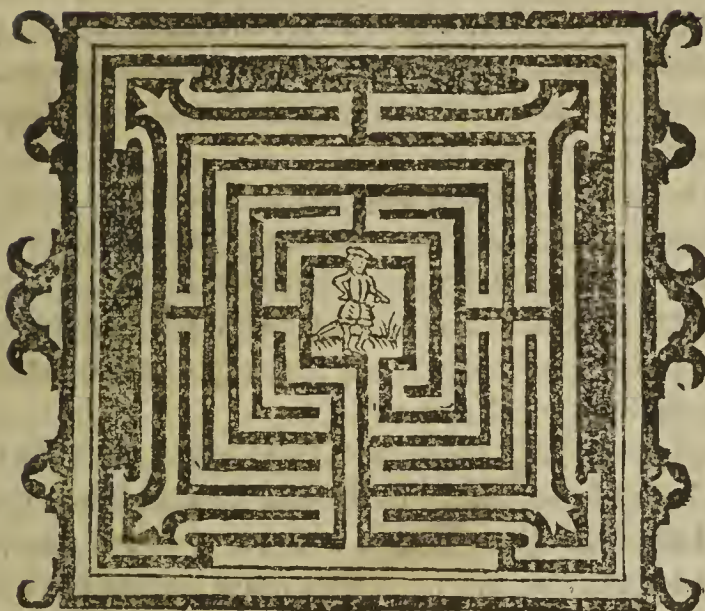
How the water being in the alleys, may be lead from place to place.

And for this cause the same ought to be made, least that in the wæding the herbes, they treade down the herbes and yong seedes comming vppe. And therefore let the wæders go by the pathes and alleyes, wæding the one halfe first, and the other after. And the beds sayth Palladius, must be made long and narrow, that is. xij. foote in length, and sixe in bredth, and spaces betwene the larger, wherby the beds may the better be wæded cleane on eche side.

And let the borders or edges of beds be rayled two foote high, in moyst or watrie places: but in dry places, it shall be sufficient to rayle them one foote high.

There must be made also certayne little alleyes or gutters, by which the moysture in watrie places may so runne forth. And those alleyes besides, must be deeper than the beddes, that the water gently poured forth, by a watering potte, from the vpper part, may the lightlye soake into the gutters or alleyes.

And where the beds be well watered, and that water standeth in the alleyes by, then may you from thence leade the water into some other necessarie place, which needeth watering.



*Fear God  
Or Fear*

And here I also place the other Maze, which may be lyke  
Ordered and vled, as I spake befoze, and it may epyther be  
set with Slope and Time, or with winter Sauery and Tyme:  
Foz these do wel endure, al y winter thzough græne. And there  
be some which set their Mazes with Lauender Cotten, Spike,  
Maierome, and such like. But let them be ordered in this point,  
as liketh best the Gardener, and so an end. Foz I doe not here  
set forth this, or the other Maze afoze expessed, foz any neces-  
sarie commoditie in a Garden, but rather appoint cyther of  
these (which liketh you best) as a beautifying vnto your Gar-  
den: Foz that Mazes and knots aptly made, do much set forth a  
Garden, which neuerthelesse I referre to your discretion foz  
that not all persons be of like abilitie.

¶ Certaine precepts, and rules of auntient men, both in the  
choyse and proper sowing of seedes. Cap. viij.

The Garden, as Palladius writeth, whiche lyeth vnder a  
gentle and hole some ayze, and hath a fountaine, Spring.

or swæte water running by it, is in a maner good enough of it selfe, and needeth the lesse instructions for sowing therof.

The temperance of time necessary to sowing.

The seedes sowne in due chosen time, as concerning the weather, and the Moone, do the sooner come by: but sowne in warme and sunnie places, or wel lying in the Sunne, doeth speedeliest bzeake forth and shote by.

And in colde seasons sowne not.

And beware of sowing any seedes, the winde then blowing out of the North, or in very colde dayes, for that in those dayes, the seedes be much hindered though the cold: And therfore for the sowing of your seedes, choose warme and temperate dayes, for the better comforting and spreading forward of your seedes, then lying in the earth.

A defence for the seedes sowne.

And if after the seedes sowne, you doubt eyther the coldnesse or hotenesse of the season, in the seorching or burning of youre seedes, then couer your beddes with the chaffe of cozne, & with stickes a crosse over the same, and small Rades or twigges also layde aptly vpon them, for the better defence, as Columella writeth.

When plants are to be sowne.

And all herbes in a maner may wel be remoued, when they shall be somewhat growne and come by, and the earthe (at the remouing) shall not be ouer drye. The newer seedes, that do sooner spring vppe, be these: the Læke, Siue, Cucumber, and the Gourde.

The variety in comaring vp of new & olde seedes.

And the old seedes that do speedilyer spring by, be these, the Parcely, Bætes, Cresses, Sauerie, Maierome, Penytocall, and Colyander. And the seedes sowne in hote places, doe speedilyer shote by in stalkes, and sooner yelde their seedes.

And the seedes that soonest bzeake and come by, be Besill, Spynage, Raues, which is a kinde of Rapes, and Raket: for all these at the thirde dayes sowing, appeare aboue the ground, and yet the slowest of all seedes cometh by Parcely.

A secret to make Leekes and Onyons begin the heade.

And to put many seedes into one hole in the ground, shall all gather into one substance, and bying forth the greater fruite: Like as you shall put many heades of Lækes or Onyons, into one hole together, and treading the blades often downe in the growling, and shooting by.

And

And y<sup>e</sup> Lettuce, Parcely, Ruket, & Basil, may grow al togith<sup>r</sup> out of one stemme or stalke, take two or thre smal bals of the Goate or Sheepes dung, and those breake, and mingle y<sup>e</sup> seedes together in them, and after roll al togither into a rounde ball, whiche after sette into newe Cowe dung, and coueryng the same with well dyessed and fine earth, that gentlye water.

A rare secret in causing sundrie plants to grow out of one stalke.



And some do take two or thre of the sheepes or goates dug, and breaking them, do so mingle the seedes and dung togither, which they after lappe in a linnen cloth, and order the same in the ground, as afoze is taught.

A secrete not vnlke to the former.

And that many sauours and tastes may be felt in one herbe: take first of the Lettuse two or thre seedes, of the Endiue so many, of the Smallache the like, of the Basil, of the Læke, and of the Parcely, (of all these thre) so many seedes as the others, then put all the seeds into a hole togither, and in such sort, that the seedes maye touche one another: but this befoze remembred, that you put them togither in the dung of a horse or Dre, wythout any earth mingled with them. And thus sowne, there wil after spring vp a plant, hauing so many sauours or tastes, as there were seedes sowne togither.

A maruelous secret in causing many sauours to be felt in one herbe.

¶ Of the times in sowing, and proper ordering of seedes, with the watering and weeding of the yong plants in the coming vp, the diuerse manner of remouing and setting again of the hearbes being somewhat growne vp. Cap. ix.

Although the auncient husband men appoint certaine pre-  
script times, as by monthes and days, yet the same ought to be considered, according to the nature of the place, and rehoi-  
tion of the ayre, so that you way thys with your selfe, whiche we shall after teach, that there be certaine seedes which do spee-  
dylyer spring vp, and certaine which do later come vp.

The nature of the ground and qualite of the ayre are to be considered in the sowing of seedes.

And as touching the Garden hearbes, they (after their se-  
wing) requiring none other diligēce and care, but only raking,  
weeding, and watering. For that by due raking, both the stones  
are voyd awaye from the newe springing seedes, and all the

what is required after the sowing of garden seedes.

noyous wédes that binder the herbes, comning vpp, are the better woꝛne away.

What maner weeding herbes, is best commended.

And yet the cleaner wéding and p'urking vp of yll rootes, must be done with the hande: which differeth from the kyling of wédes by raking. And of these also whiche most harme the beddes newe sowne is, to walke much by them, or to moue the earth, when the same shal be verie loose: for thereby it setteth fast the ground, that it maketh wédes the harder to be plucked vp, after much raine falling.

The seasonable time of watering, & what maner water ought to be vled.

The maner and forme of watering of herbes.

And the watering of your dry beddes, which often hapeneth for lacke of raine and moysture, about the hotte and drye dayes, muste chieflyest be done with luke warme water, and that every moꝛning and euening, as Plinie wyrteth, if néede so require, with that water whiche timelye in the moꝛning is drawne out of no deepe Well, and reserued in some wodden vessell for thre houres befoze, or as (some doe write) that it be set vnder the skie for two or thre dayes together, that the Sunne maye the better woꝛke vppon it. And water not youre beddes too muche, for that the same harmeth and weakeneth the rootes and plantes. And to this water also myngle a lyttle dung, the whyche shall gyue the better nourishmente woth the water to the Hearbes; and yong Plantes comyng vppe, if it be leasurelye and gently watered forth.

Tender plants new sprung néede lesse watering then sturdier growe.

And the yong tender plants newe sprung vp, néede lesse watering than the stronger growne, which desire a great deale the more watering, yet the same to be leasurelye done, that the rootes may drinke alike of it, and not be hastily drowned with water. But colde, and salt water, drawne out of deepe Wells, is most hurtful vnto all plantes and herbes, excepte the same stande for certayne houres in the hote Sunne, and be watered warme on the plantes.

And such seedes as oughte only to be sowne neare the ende of Haruest, as in the moneth of September or October, that they may all the winter continue, and be soaked in the ground, be these: Carlyke, Onyons, Scallions, yong Leke heades, great

great Barlike, and Mustarde sēde:

If of necessitie you must plante or sowe anye thyng in a salte grounde, then that what it be, muste be planted in the ende of Haruest, or sowed the like, that the euilnesse and corruptnesse of the grounde maye be washed away with the winter shoures. And if ye set anye yong trees in that grounde, let that thereabout be myxed wyth swēte Earthe and Ryuer sande.

What is to be done in a salt ground.

And your sēdes (that you minde to sowe) may not be aboue a yeare olde, and that byused be whyter within, and heauer: least being corrupt by oldnesse, they may not encrease & come sozwarde.

seeds must not be above a year old. The knowe ledge of seeds incete for sowing.

The thirde moneth sowing agrēeth in colde and snowie places, where the qualitie of Sommer is moyst, but seldome in other places the like hadde correspondeth.

And sēdes thre monethes olde, will better agrē, if that in hote places they be sowne in the Haruest.

And you may plant and sowe in your grounde (if you wyll) the best kinds of euery fruite, sēdes, slyppes or graffes, but set and sowe that (which you knowe by experience) will best prosper, and come sozward in your ground.

A good tryall of eury ground.

But any newe kinde of sēdes, and not tryed befoze in your ground, you may not put your whole hope that vndoubtedlye they will prosper, in that it is doubtful whether they wil prosper or no.

A tryal of rare seedes in your garden.

And in moyste places, the sēdes do soner spring vp, than in the drye: and this vnderstande, according to the kind, and prosper nature of them. And of this, the choyse of grounde in the sowing of your sēdes much auayleth.

And all suche settes and sēdes do seldome prosper whiche be sowne or set in shadowy places. And such things also as doe flower, in y time of their flower bearing, are not to be handled.

Shadowy places hurtful to plants.

And all kinde of pulses, as Peason, Vitches, Tares. &c. (as the Greeke Authours will) must be sowne in drye ground, except the Beanes, whiche ought onely to be sowne in moyste ground.

E.ij.

And

What seedes  
may be sowed  
at pleasure of  
the Gardener

And such seedes, which at will and pleasure maye be sowed  
(as both in harvest and spring time) vnto your vse and commo-  
ditie, and that in a warme and comfortable season and fruitful  
ground, be these, the Lettuce, the Colewortes, the Parsnips,  
the Carrottes, the white Poppie, the Artichokes, and diuerse  
other seedes.

A consideratt  
on in the sow-  
ing of seedes  
in hote and  
cold ground.

And in colde Countreys, the Harvest sowing must be done  
earlier, and the spring later. But in hote countreys, the Har-  
uest sowing must be later and the spring timelier.

And whatsoeuer you wil sowe, let the same be done after y<sup>e</sup>  
fourth day of the new Moone, and so continue vnto the full of y<sup>e</sup>  
Moone, but no longer: in that it oftentimes so happeneth, that y<sup>e</sup>  
sowing of seedes in the decrease or waine of the Moone, prosper-  
eth not, as witnesseth Auenezra.

And such things also as you wil cut downe or gather, let the  
same be done in the wayne of the Moone. But suche things as  
you minde to sell, let those be gathered in the full Moones, by  
cause the greater they do then abide, the vendibler or readier  
they wil be to be sold.

What season  
best commen-  
ded for the  
sowing of  
seedes.

And all seedes which be kindly sowed, be rather sowed in  
temperate weather, when as some shoures of rain moistning  
the ground, fall a day or two before, rather than in a dry season  
and colde ayre: For that the seedes lyke sowed, doe speedilyer  
spring vp through the warmenesse and comforte of the season,  
than in a colde ayre, which of propertie doth both include them  
in the earth, and keepeth them long in comming vp.

And yet it oftentimes so happeneth, that althoughe the  
seedes be perfect good, that they spring not after their sowing,  
through some malice of the celestial bodies. And for that cause,  
sowe sundry seedes together, for the sorer tryall and proofe of  
them.

When plants  
may best be  
remoued, and  
of the commo-  
dity by remo-  
uing them.

And after all these, the most or greatest number of plantes,  
may well be remoued when they be somewhat sprung vp, so  
that the ground be not ouer dry nor ouer moist.

For by ~~remouing~~, such plants may the better be weeded (be-  
ing thinne set) and grow the better vnto their full bignesse, and  
be



be also sweeter, so that they gently lose and weede away allwaies all the euill weedes th at spring vp amongst them, which otherwise woulde hinder and take away their nourishment.

And those hearbes also which ought not to be remoued, after their young comming vp, muste be thinne sowne; but those whiche ought to be remoued, must be thicke sowne together. A good instruction of sowing seedes.

¶ Certaine helpes and secretes for the Garden seedes, as well before as after the sowing of them, that they maye not bee harmed by any inwarde or outwarde meanes. . Cap. x.

AND now in vaine hath the Gardner (or any other) bestowed his paines, in the diligent laboring of his ground, and committing of seedes to the earth, if in like maner he seeke not those meanes which may best auoyde the harme of the Birdes, scraping vp the seedes, and the other beastes and wormes creeping in the earth. And to auoide these harmes and dammages, marke diligently these instructions hereafter taught.

And first, if your Seedes a little before the sowing, be steeped or soaked in the iuyce of the hearbe named the house Leake, or for lacke of sufficient plentie of the hearbe, to lay the seedes all a day and night in, you may in steade thereof, seeth the hearbe in faire water, and with that water you may sprinkle your seedes sowne in the beds, that they may so drawe to them, and drinke in of y<sup>e</sup> iuyce, which by that means doth only defēd, that neither the Birdes, Ants, or Wisniers, Fieldmice, nor anye other vermin, wil at any time after touche those seedes or yong plants after sprung vp, but cause thē encrease the better, as writeth the worthy Columella, who of experience is often noted true. Worthy secretes in preserving the seedes sowne in the earth without harme.

And Africanus writeth, that if you seeth a little wheate or barley in wine, or soake it in the wine, with the roote Hellebor, or other wise Rosewort, and after scatter it in the paths, and alleys aboute the Garden, that the same not onely defendeth the seedes frō the iniurie of birds, that maketh them sceme as deade, or rather as drunken by eating thereof, whiche being on this wise, he willeth to hang by the legs, on a sticke, vnto the searing

A marvellous  
matter of the  
decoction of  
Riuer Cres-  
uilles.

And the sayde Africanus wyteth, that the decoction of the Riuer Creuilles, sprinckled on the seedes, doth both defende the seedes, and the yong plantes sprung of the seedes, that neyther the Birdes nor anye other creeping thing will after (a matter greatly to be maruelled at) neuer touche them. And there bee some, whiche will, after the yong plants be some what sprung vp, to sprinckle only of the water wherin the Creuilles be sodden, as a sure defense, whiche many times hath bin tried, and found true by sundry, if so be the same be done at a certain time of the Yone.

A secrete of  
the Greeke &  
Latine hus-  
bandmen for  
the preser-  
uing of seeds  
very notable.

And the powder of the Harts horne, either filed or shauen, and the same infused in swete water, and the seedes befoze the sowing soaked therein, or sprinckled with that water after the sowing, doth wel defend the yong plantes from being gnawne of any creeping thing.

And the seedes after the sowing, sprinckled wyth the brine water made of Nitre, doth well defende them from being eaten of woymes, antes, and suche like, as Vergil in hys husbandrye wyteth.

And the Greeke Authoz Apuleius wyteth, the only sprinckling of wine on the seedes and yong plantes, to be a means of the better strength and encrease of them.

And certaine Greeke wyters of husbandrye, allowed of Plinie, Columella, and Palladius, affyrme, that the roots of the wild Cucumber, soaked in swete water for a daye and a nighte, and that water often sprinckled on the seedes, and the next daye following (those seedes covered with a blanket) and after sown in the ground, that then they be defended from all noisome woymes, and other creeping things.

And the Greeke Authoz Apuleius wyteth as a safegard vnto your seedes, that if befoze the digging and casting vp of your beds, you draw aboute the Garden the speckled Tode, and putting him into an earthen potte, you do after bury him in middle of your Garden, or ouerwhelme him with earth in a deepe furrowe, which let there remaine vnto the sowing time, and after digge him vp, casting him a great way off, leass the plants grow

a secrete of  
the speckled  
Tode.

wing

Wing therabout, might become bitter and vnsauory. And the Egyptian and Greek Authors of husbandrie write, that the yong plants shal not be gnawne noz harmed of any creeping thing, if the seeds be sowne about the first quarter of the Moone.

And Democritus writeth, that if you put ten Sea or Ryuer a phisicke experiment of Democritus, Creuisses into a vessell full of water, and covering it, you sette the same abroad to be sunned for ten dayes and soake your seeds that after the plantes be come vp, they shall not be harmed of any creeping things. for other eighte dayes in that water, whiche after the minde of Democritus sowe in poure beds. And after the yong plantes of those Seeds be sprung vp, they will not drie Cattell and other small beasts from the eating of them, but all other creeping things from the gnawing of them.

But farther of these helpes shal be taught in that Chapter, where we write of the diuers remedies against sundry beasts, woymes, flies, and suche like, that commonly annoy Gardens.

¶ Certayne speciall times to be noted and obserued, eyther for their ayde and fauour to be chosen, or for their annoy-  
aunce and incōmoditie to be eschewed, for sowing, planting, or graffing. Cap. xi.

The more of valure our stufte and labour thereabout is, the more circumspect we ought to be, and the more aide there-  
to we may get, or the greater daunger therein we may auoide,  
the more carefull euery wise man wil be.

And the dayly experience is our scholemaister, to instruct vs how much it preuaileth or hindzeth for seeds to be sowne, plantes to be set, or Siens to be grafted in this or that time, hauing respect not only to the time of the yeare, as the Sunne altereth it; but also to the increase or wayne of the Moone, to the signe she is in, and to the places of heauen aboue, or vnder the earth, and to the aspectes also of other plants, whose beames of lighte and influence, both quicken, comfozte, preserve, and maintaine, or else nippe, drie, wither, consume and destroye by suntze wayes, the tender seeds, plantes, and grafts, according to their nature and force naturall or accidentall.

Herein

Herein first presupposing, the due circumspection of the choise of ground, & other things generally required in this. And therefore according both to the auctoritie of the wise and experte Astronomers, as also the ware & prudent experimenter, in either sowing or planting, or other like practise, aboute Herbes, Plantes, or Trees, haue leste vnto vs for our comoditie these rules following, that are to be vnderstanded and kept in causes of impoztaunce, and where the occasion may be taken.

When Saturne and the Moone are cyther threescore degrees of the Zodiacke asunder, (whiche distaunce is called a Sextile aspect, thus commonly marked  $\ast$ ) or when they are asunder, 126 degrees, which is called a Triangle, Trygon, or Trient aspect, then is it good to labor the earth for either sowing, tilling, gardening, vining, or building.

But when they are a quarter of the Zodiacke asunder, called a Quartile aspect, whiche is, 90. degrees, then meddle not in such matters. For when they are in places opposite one to another, as if the one be in Aries, and the other in like number of degrees in Libra, and so of Taurus, and Scorpio. &c.

The full Moones are not good for this purpose, speaking generally; as we now doe, the Moone being neare the Dragons tail, is not good, but neare the Dragons heade is good. All other things being presupposed equal, and mooste briefly for this little treatise, to knit vp other obseruations depending of the Moones places onely, consider these following.

The Moone being betwene the 28. degree of Taurus, and the eleuenth of Gemini, sow. And the Moone being betwene the 28. of Gemini, and the sixte of Cancer sowe not. And from the sixt of Cancer, vnto the 19. of the same, sowe and plowe. And from the 28. of Leo, vnto the 11. of Virgo, sowe & plant. And from thence vnto the 24. of Virgo, bulde, sowe, and plant. And from the 24. of Virgo vnto the 7. of Libra, sowe and plowe: and from thence vnto the 19. sow and plant. And from the 6. of Capricornus, vnto the 19. of Capricornus, sowe. And from the 24. of Pisces, vnto the 17. of Aries, sowe. Besides all these, you may by your naturall reason, easily finde this rule of the olde writers to be well noted

to vs. that if either in a very moiste ground, or else the seeds you sowe, be seeds of great moisture, that then you shall commodiously choose the ende of the Moones wayne, when she is verie neare hir chaunge, but if either your ground be of the driest, or youre seeds, then the Moone waning, and towarde the sul, is fittest, as Plinie witnesseth.

And the more of these you can find at your time concurring, the better it is, as in good ground, well dressed, in due season of the yeare, in due time of the Moones age, in due time of hir place in the Zodiacke, in due aspect of Saturne, well placed in the sight of heauen. &c. And vnlesse your stuffe be good, all this preuaileth not. And besides that, the common Almanackes vpon particular aspects incident for the time, do now and then exactly warn you of times good to plant in, as commonly when the Moone is in Taurus, and Aquarius, or to sow in, as when she is in Taurus, Cancer, Virgo, Libra, and Capricornus, or when anye of these signes, are ascending in the East angle. And when Mars neyther regardeth the ascendēt, or the Moone, but that he be weekly placed in the scituation of the heauens for that time.

A great many of other rules as concerning the particular fauour or hinderaunce of the heauens, might (and that necessarily) haue bene brought in this place, but neither is it in my purpose, for this present, eyther to be long in writing or darke in sense.

And perchance, the most part of the common sort of people, will thinke those thinges somewhat aboue their capacitie, yet my conscience bound me somewhat to put such matter into their heads, occasioning them thereby (where the daintinesse and value of the seeds or settes so require) to vse the counsaile of some suche as both may expounde them these rules, and giue them ouer alike, if neede be.

Euē here you must presuppose all things on your part fully and duely first prepared and well appointed, and then to wayte for, or take hēde to suche times as here are noted, for the working of the planets therein.

¶ Certaine helpes and secrets against haile, lightnings, tempests, mists, ruste, frosts, and burning heate. Cap. xij.

**S**eyng the seeds, plants, and hearbs, sown and sette in the Garden, be after in daunger of haile and mists, and other noyme weather, whiche greatly discomfite the Gardener or (at the leaste) suche, whiche hope to haue profit and commoditie by the herbes sown and set in the Garden: Therfoze for the better auoyding of these dangers, the auintient husbandmen and skilfull Gardners, haue founde oute by practise, sundrye remedies against such weather.

And first against haile, the auintient husbandmen counsaile to compasse the allies of the garden, about with the white vine.

Helpes and secrets  
creats aginst  
haile at hand.

Helps against  
lightnings,  
out of the  
Greekes and  
Columella.

The Wape  
tree not harm-  
med by light-  
nings.

Helps against  
thicke mists,  
and froste.

And Philostratus willeth, that when we see the haile neare at hande, then to compasse the alleis aboute wyth the skinne of the Sea Calfe, or else the beaste Hiena, or the Crocodile, and to hang any of these skinned also at the enterance or comming in of the Garden.

And the Greokes write, that the Garden shall not be harmed by lightnings, if that the same aboute be covered wyth the hyde of the riuer horse, named Hippopotamon. And Columella writeth, that if you compasse the alleis of youre Garden about with the white Vine, or hang the Dwle in the Garden with the wings abroad, that either of these do defend the Garden from lightnings. And sundry doe plant the Wape tree in divers places of the garden, as a defence to it against lightnings.

And Archibius wrote vnto Antiochus King of Syria, and divers ancient men the like, that if you burpe the speckled Tode enclosed in a new earthen pot, in the middle of youre Garden, that the same defendeth it from hurtfull weather and tempests. And some hang the Egles feathers, or the skinne of the Sea calfe in the middle of the Garden, or in the foure corners of the same as a proued defence to it against tempests. And if thick mists do harme thy Garden, then burne heapes of chaffe, wedges, or shrubbes in sundry places, for that the smoke shall muche helpe to this matter. And Diophanes in his rules of husbandrye, wil-

leth

leth to gather together the deade wårdes, or suche like matter, and to burne them on heaps in many places about the Garden, but especially in that parte, which way the wind then bloweth, that it may so carrie the smoke through the Garden, for by that meanes, it is thoughte to auoide and putte awaye the euill and harme of the myste, then eminent or at hand.

And when rust is falling on the hearbes, then Bericius in his husbandrie instructions, willeth to burne the leste hozne of the Dre, with Dre dung, and to make a greate smoake forthwyth rounde aboute the Garden, but especially that way whiche the winde then bloweth, whereby all the smoake through the wind maye so be carried against the violence of the ruste falling, whiche by that meanes shall beare off the noysome occasion of the aye.

Helps against ruste presente.

And Apuleius writeth, that if you make a smoke with þ burning of thre Creuisses, & Dre dung, or Goats dung, or chaffe, þ same to be a most present remedy against the rust And certaine Grækes wypte, that a Garden sown with beanes, both with in, and without, they do defend it from being harmed by frosts.

A secrete against froste oute of the Greekes.

And both Bericius and Anatolius write, that if you soake the rootes or leaues of either the wilde Cucumber, or Coloquintida byused, in water, and sprinckle your hearbes taken with ruste, before the rising of the Sun, that the same recouereth the herbs.

Helps against rust that fell before the sun rising.

And the laide Anatolius writeth, that if you steepe your seeds in the water of the rootes of the wilde Cucumber, before you sowe them, that the same defendeth them from all harmes of the wormes, flies, and all other creeping things.

And Apuleius writeth, that if you plant the Bay tree in manye places of youre Garden, that the same putteth awaye the harmes of the ruste, as hath often bin experienced.

+

And that burning heate harme not your Garden, whiche commonly commeth about the Canicular or dog dayes, Plinie willeth to burne and make a smoake of thre Creuisses about your ground, and vnder your vine, as a good remedy against the same.

A secrete against burning heate.

+

¶ Certaine helpes and secretes against the Garden wormes, the greene flies, the Canker wormes, the greate Mothes, the Snailes with shels, and wythout shels, that harme and gnawe aswell the leaues of trees and fruites, as the hearbes and yong plantes comming vppe. Cap. xiiij.

Garden grounds harmed by divers injuries.

A harde expellige sometime of creeping things oute of Gardens.

Remedies against the Garden worms.

¶ And forasmuch as it is apparant vnto al mens eyes, that the Herbes & yong plantes after they be come vp, be diuersly in danger to certain small beasts & creeping things, liuing aswell vnder the earth, as aboue, that cause the plants often times to become weake, if they be not speedily looked vnto for remedye. And such also is that gret encrease & abundance of them, that by all means possible that can be deuised either with fire, smoaks, or Iron, they may not after be vtterly expelled & driuen oute of the Garden, being there once lodged in the ground: Wherefore that these annoyances to the Garden, may by the diligent industry of the Gardener be the better destroyed, and that hee may receiue the moze commoditie and profit by his herbes, floures, & rootes, therefore shall here be declared suche speciall remedies, as the auntiente and late wryters haue inuented, and by their diligence practised, vnto the great comfort of the Gardener, and to him which hath delight in a Garden.

And firste Africanus, in his learned worke of Husbandrye wryteth, that if you smoke the holes of the wormes, with drye Dre or Cowe dung, that way whiche the winde then bloweth, that it doth expell them from the eating or gnawing after of your herbes. And Plinie wryteth, that the pure mother or some of the oyle, without y mixture of salt, sprinkled on the worms, doth alio driue them away.

And if the wormes hang to the rootes of the plants, or herbes, throught the naughtinesse of the dung, then wæde the beds and plants very diligently.

And Frontius wryteth, that the hearbes shall not be harmed of the Garden flye, if that by a naturall meanes, you do plant or sowe in manye places amongst your hearbes, the hearbe named *Höket*,

And



And Anatolius in his husbandry instructions writeth, that the Garden flies be killed with the sprinkling of sharpe, vinegar (mingled with the iuyce of Henbane) on them. And the lyke doth the sodden licour or water of the herbe, named Fleabane, as writeth Pamphilius the Greeke, in which the herbe named Nigella Romana, hath for a time bin soked and sprinckled, kyll the garden flies.

Remedies against the greene flies of the Garden.

And if you will not haue your Seedes after the sowing, to be gnawen or eaten of any creeping things in the Garden, then before the sowing, soke your Seedes in the iuyce of the hearbe named Sengreene or houseleake, as before was taught.

And Anatolius writeth, that the seedes shall not be gnawen, if you sow or set them in the ground in the shell of a Tortoise.

And Palladius writeth, that your pot herbes shall not engender noysome wormes, or other creeping things, if that you dye the Seedes, before the sowing in a Tortoise skinne, or else sette the herbe myntes in many places, and especiall ye among the Colewortes: and the like as some write doth a little quantitie of the bitter fitches or tares (sowne amongst) preuaille, especially if the same be sowne among the radishes, and rapes. Also the auntient writers wyll, that the Ciches, which be a grayne like to Peason, be sowne in manye places amongst the potte herbes, for a surer defence against al creeping things.

And Frontius writeth, that if the pot hearbes be sprinckled with the bzine made of goose dung, that the same defendeth the herbes from being gnawen of the Garden wormes, or other creeping things.

And now as touching the Caterpillers which the Greekes named Palmer wormes, that greatly annoy and spoyle the herbes of the Garden, Plinie wyll, that you sprinckle the Plants or trees with bloudy twigges, as a speciall remedy to driue them so away.

Diuersely helps and secretes against the Caterpillers.

And other auntient writers teach, that if you hang riuier Creuises in many places of the garden, that y same doth likewise driue away the Caterpillers.

And certaine others wyll, that you sprinckle the plantes with the deaw of that water, in which the vine ashes haue bin soked, as a present remedie.

And there be other whiche will, that about the bodys and armes of the trees, ye kinde and make a smoake of Wrimstone and vnleaked lime together, as a special remedie to driue them away.

Singular  
practises a-  
gainst the  
Caterpillers.

And there are certaine other, which first do soften the seedes in that lie which is drawn and made of the figge ashes, before they sow them in the ground, or rather in the blood of the Caterpillers, or in the iuyce of the herb named y<sup>e</sup> house Leke: And some will also, to sprinckle of the figge ashes vpon the Caterpillers.

Diuerse helps  
against the  
Caterpillers.

And certaine rather will, that you sowe this hearbe in fashion to a big Dnyon, and named of the Apothecaries Squilla, in the Garden, or hang the same here and there, aboute the Garden, for a presente remedie agaynst the Caterpillers.

Remedies v-  
ry notable in  
driuing away  
quite of the  
Caterpillers.

And some wyll, to burne the Toade skoles or Musheromes, whych growe out of the Walnut tree, and be stiffe and harde, that with the strong sauour of them, they may so be destroyed. And some do write, y<sup>e</sup> sauour made of y<sup>e</sup> only dung of Backes, in many places of the Garden, will destroye them. And if the Caterpillers doe yet withstand these former helpes, then vse this practise here vnder taught, whiche is, that you take Dro pisse, and the mother of Dyle, and mire them equally together, after set the same ouer y<sup>e</sup> fire vntil it be hote, and taking y<sup>e</sup> same of, let it coole, which being colde, sprinckle on the pot herbes & trees, and the same shall destroy them, as Anatolius writeth of experience.

And Palladius writeth, that if you burne small bundels of Garlike blades without heades, making a smoake with them in the Alleis and pathes of the garden about, that the same will flea them with the only sauour.

And certaine Greeke writers will, that you take a fewe of the Caterpillers in the next garden or Orchard, and seth them

In water with the Herbe Dyl, whyche being colde, sprinckle on the herbes or trees, and in such places where they be, and the same shall destroy the. But take very diligent heede, that none of thys water fall eyther on your face or hands.

A practise of the greke husbandmen against the Caterpillers.

And some will, to burne of Galbanum, or the houes of Goates, or the Hartes horne, making a smoke in the Garden whiche waye the winde then bloweth, as a speciall remedy to sea them.

And there be some which will, that you steepe the Vine ashes in water, for thre dayes, and after sprinckle plentifully of the same on your herbes and trees, as a present remedy to drive away the Caterpillers.

A singular sprinckling stock to drive away the Caterpillers.

And Diophanes the Greeke wytteth, that the Mothes whiche kill the Larks may be destroyed on this wise, if that you take the maue of a weather sheepe newe killed, not washed, but hauing all the filth hanging thereon, which lightly couer or poulder with earth in that place, where they most swarme in the Garden, and after two dayes, you shall finde a maruelous companie of the mothes and other flies heaped thereupon, which eyther carrie away, or bury very deepe in that place, that they ryse not againe. And when you haue thus done but twice or thrice together, you shall utterly destroy them for coming any more.

And against snayles, both with shell, and without shell, the newe mother or some of Dyle sprynckled on them, doth greatly preuaile, and the like doth the soote of Chymneys, scattered on the beds, drive them away,

Helps against Snayles.

And Iulius Fronto wytteth, that all pot herbes be greatly holpen and defended from noysome Beastes, if by them y herbe Roket be eyther solue or set.

A secrete for pot herbes out of Iulius Fronto.

Certaine

## The Arte of Gardening

32

Certaine helpes and secretes, against the Garden Moles, Pise-mires, Gnattes, Flies with the long hinder legges, Breeses, field Mice, Backes, Serpentes, Frogges, and Todes, whiche gnawe, harme, and destroye as well the trees and fruytes, as other herbes and floures. Cap. xiiij.

why Moles  
are a disquiet  
and grieue to  
Gardeners.

And soz that the Moles in many places of gardens, through their digging and casting vp, do leaue bare both the seeds, and yong plants comming vp, to the vttermost destruction of the good increase of them, which by that meanes doth not a litle disquiet and greue the Gardener, to see his painefull labors so to be subuerted and come to ruine, contrary to hys expectation hoped after. And therefore suche helpes against their mallice, as eyther the auntient Greekes, or the Latinists haue written of, shal here be vttered.

A proper se-  
crete to driue  
away Moles  
in the earth.

And first the Greekes write, that the Moles will at no time dig or cast vp in the Garden, where the herbe named Ticker-worde, other wise in Latin Palma Christi, doth eyther grow of their own accord in that ground, or brought other wise by hay, and there set.

And both Paxamus and Sotion the Greeke, write, that if you take a Walnut and boare a hollowe hoale, filling the same afterwarde with Chaffe, Rosen, and Brimstone, and caused to smoake, put the same into the bigger and newer hoale of hys comming forth of the earth, stopping diligentlve all his other hoales, and that none of the smoke passe forth. And in such sort leaue that one and bigger hoale wyde open, that the ayze may the better driue the smoake into the earthe, whiche after the Mole feelth the sauour thereof, doeth eyther forthwith runne some other way from thence, or is found choaked and dead in the earth.

An easie prac-  
tise of the an-  
cient husband  
men in taking  
of Moles.

And some write, that you may take all the Moles in youre garden by an easie manner. If that you get a quicke Mole, put the same into a deepe earthen pot, setting the edge to the earth, which Mole, after a while feeling himselfe thus inclosed, will  
cry

erie out, and after the other Moles in that ground doe thus heare him crye, they will hastily draw neare vnto him, and minding to helpe him forth, will so fall into the potte. And now by thys easye meanes if you wil, you may take and destroy al the Moles in your Garden.

And some wyll, to take the roote of the white Posewort, making the same into fine powder, and after mixing it with barley meale, to worke it together with milke & wine, & after make it vppe into little balles, whyche laye wythin the hoales of the Moles. And Albertus wytteth, that if you stoppe the hoales of Moles, wyth eyther Carlyke, Dryons or Lækes, that anye of these, doe eyther force hym forthwith to runne from that place, or to cast vppe a newe in some other place.

Diuersē special remedies either to kill or drive away Moles.

And some wyll to bryng vppe Cattes, to runne onely in the Garden, for the better dzyuing of them away: And some also doe bryng vp Weasels tame, letting them after runne vp and downe in the Garden, and to runne into the hoales of the Moles, whyche throughe theyr knycke in hunting after the Moles, do so dzyue them out of the ground.

A proper hunting and dzyuing away of Moles out of the garden.

And some will to fill the mouth of the hoale, with the powder of the red marking Stone, or redde Oker, mixed with the succe of the wylde Cucuber. And some wil, to take Galbanum and Bzymstone, fylling a Walnutte Shell therewyth, and to make a smoake into the hoale, whyche so dzyueth them away.

And Palladius wytteth, that if you bestryke the lower part of your tree with red Oker, mixed with Tarre, and hang a Jay therby, that the same doth so gather pismiers al into one place, that you may after easily destroy them.

And certayn others wil, to annoynt the stalkes of Plantes, & bodies of trees with the Dyle made of Lupines, or rather with the powder of y Lupines, mixed with Dyle. And sundry wyte, that they may be destroyed with the only mother or some of Dyle sprinckled on them.

And Palladius wytteth, that you may dzyue away the great

G.

beaps

Palladius  
a marvellous  
practiser a-  
gainst the  
Wismyers.

heape and swarme of the Wismyers gathered together, if into their heape you put the harte of an Owle: and if the Wismyers runne and straye abzoade in your garden, then strowe or sse Ashes in the alleyes and pathes about where they runne. And it doth likewise auayle against their straying abzoade, if that you bestrike the pathes where they runne, eyther wyth brighte whyte chalke, or wyth Oyle, as hath bene experientced.

And the sayd Palladius writeth, that you maye driue away the Wismyers, if into their hoales you spzinckle of the poulder of the Organnie and Wymstone myxed together, or if you fil and stufte the hoales of the Wismyers, with the poulder made of dry Wyffer shelles burned, it doth likewise destroye them.

And Paxamus writeth, that if you take of the Wismyers, & burne of them in the middle of the Garden, that the rest will forlake the ground. And the sayd Authour writeth, that if you make a stincke with Rosen befoze their hoales, they will not after come forth, but forlake the place.

Other practises  
against  
the Wismyers

And he also writeth, that if you compasse them with white wox, Chalke, or redde Oker, or else strowe round about them, the herbe named Organnie, but especially those wayes where they haue common course. For then neyther wyl the Wismyers come neare that plante where it is, nor runne by that Tree, whiche is bound about the body with this herbe, so much they hate the saour thereof.

And Palladius writeth, that if you bestrike or annoynte the plants and trees, with the red Oker, Tarre and Butter mixed together, that the same driueth them away.

And certaine Greeke writers will, to annoynte the Plantes and trees with the gall of a Bull, the mother of Oyle, and Tar tempered together, whiche so driueth them away. And they also wyte, that if you poure of the propper droppying of the Poppie, myxed wyth Wyneger, into their hoales, that they after die.

Also some wyte, that you maye destroye the Wismyers with

with the only saour or stinke or smoke of the wilde Cubum-ber bzent.

And certain wil, that if the Wisniers creep vpon your trées, to make bzode round rings about the bodies and armes of the trées, with white chalke: For that by twice or thrice, or oftner so doing, you shall cause them to forsake the creeping vpon anye more on those Trées.

That wisniers creepe not on your trees.

And Plinie wyrteth, that you may destroy the Wisniers, if that you stop their holes, eyther with Sea mud, or with ashes, if that they be not wet. And yet the herbe Heliotropion (which some suppose to be the Parigolde) by scrawing the leaues on the holes, doe chiefly destroy them. And certaine wyrite, that the water in whiche the vnbaked Tile hath bene soaked, peured vpon the holes, doth destroy them. And nowe these instructions against the Wisniers, shal here suffice.

A secreete of Plinie for the killing of Wisniers.

And Democritus in his rules of husbandrie wyrteth, that y Gnattes which haunt and feed in Gardens, maye be dzien away, with the only burning and making of a smoke of y herbe Calamynte.

And the sayde Democritus wyrteth, that the decoction of the herbe Organny in vineger, & sprinckled on them, doth likewise dzue them away, as hath bene experiented.

Sundry remedies for y dzuing away of Gnattes.

And the Gnattes also be chased away if that you steepe the herbe Rue, or herbe Grace in water, and sprinckle the same on the beds where they haunt. And they be also destroyed & chased away, with the smoke made of Galbanum, Wymstone, & Comin, mixed together, and likewise chased away with the decoction of the Hearbe named Flebane, sprinckled on the beddes.

And certayne Grækes wyrite, that the stalkes of Hempe flouring doe dzue away the swarme, or huge companye of Gnattes: And the like doeth the smoake made of the Dre dung.

A sprinckle made of the hempe flouring to dzue away Gnattes.

And Palladius wyrteth, that the powder of the roote of Elecampane, myxed with the ashes of hoznes burned, and the same sprinckled on the beds, doth dzue the Gnats away. And Plinie

G.ij.

wyrteth,

Certain practises of the Greeces, against the flies with the long hinder legges.

wryteth, that a smoake made onely of the gumme named Galbanum doth drive away the Gnattes.

A secreete for the driving away of thole flies.

And Byricius the Grecke wryteth, that if you sprinckle the place most warming of those flies, (with the long hinder legs) the powder of Roseworthe, Myrrour, and milke mixed together, that the same will either kill them, or drive them quite away, and the same Byricius wryteth, that Alum with the hearb Organnie steeped in milke, and the same sprinckled on the beds and hearbes, letteth them from touching those hearbes after. And the Bay leaues or hearbes beaten to powder, with the roote of the black Roseworthe, & tempered either in milke, or in water and hony mixed together, the same sprinckled on y<sup>e</sup> herbs doth either slea them, or drive them quite away.

And certaine Greeces wryte, that if you burne of those flies in the middle of your Garden, that the savoure of them wyll drive away the rest: and the like doth the wetting of some of them, and after covering them there with wette mudde.

And Byricius wryteth that the flies with the long hinder legs will not after touche anye of those hearbes, whych be sprinckled with the water, wherein the Lake or Centoric hath bin steeped.

Didimus practise against the Bees.

Remedies against the garden and field Mice.

And againste the Bees (whiche be flies that eat the corne as it groweth) and doe besydes muche harme to Hearbes, Didimus willeth to solve three graynes or cornes of Mustardseede, neare to the roote of such a Tree, and among the Hearbes eaten sayth them, whych so drive them away: And against the Fielde and Garden mice, Apuleius willeth to stepe youre Seedes before the sowynge in an Ore or Colves Gall. And certaine will, to stoppe theyr hoales with the leaues of Rhododaphnes, for that when they like to come forth & gnaw of those leaues, they after die.

And certaine Greeces will, to take the powder made of the wilde Cucumber, Herbayne seedes, bitter Almonds, & black Roseworthe, (of eck a like quantitie) and the same to worke together with oyle: whych laid or put into the holes of y<sup>e</sup> Garden or field mice, driveth the speedily away. And Plinie wryteth y<sup>e</sup>

the



the Garden mice may be driuen away, if you sprinckle the beds with the ashes of the Welesell, or with that water sprinckled on the beds, in which the Cat hath bin washed. And the seedes also (befoze the sowing) steeped in the gall of an Ore, doeth driue them from the eating of the seedes at any time after.

And Florentine writeth, that the Snake or Adder will not lodge or abide in that Garden, where eyther Mozme woodde, Mugworste, or Sothernwoodde be aptly planted in the corners, or rounde aboute the Garden. And if they haunt any Garden, then with the smoake made of the drie Lillie roote, or Hartes hozne, or of the hooves of the Goats, they maye speedilye be driuen awaye. And Democritus writeth, that if you caste the greene Oken leaues, vpon either the Snake or Adder, that he dieth forthwith: or if any spitteth fasting into their mouth opened. And Florentine writeth, that neyther the Snake nor Adder wil come neare that place, where either y<sup>e</sup> fat of a Hart lyeth buried, or the roote of Centorie, or the stone of Gagates, or the dung of a Kite lyeth.

And you maye driue away any venomous creeping thing, if that you take the pouder made of Nigella, Pellitorie, Galbanum, Hartes hozne, Bizimstone, Peucedanum, and the hooves of the Goate, miryng all these together by equall portions: and wrought together with vineger, make little balles of the same, and with the same make a smoke, and it driueth all forthwith to forsake the ground vpon the saue therof.

And they hate all strong sauors, whiche be either made with Garlike or Onion blades, and such like: and the flame of fyre also, which greatly dimmeth their sighte. And the Adders do likewise loue the Hauine tree, the Iute tree, and the Fenell, as the Ecd:s do the Sage, and the Snake the herb Ruket.

And the Snakes and Adders (of all other thinges) doe mooste hate the Ashe tree, for that they cannot abide the touching of y<sup>e</sup> long shadow in the morning, nor that in the euening, but run far from it. And Plinie writeth a maruellous matter of the Ash tree, for if a Snake (saith he) be compassed about with the greene Ashe tree leaues, and a fire made in the middell, that he

How snakes and adders may be killed

Howe anye place may be free from the Snake or Adder.

Under what the adders & Snakes loy to be.

The naturall contrarietie of the Ashe & the snake or adder worthy to be noted.

will rather run into the burning fire, than towards the leaues, so much he hateth the Ashe tree.

Of the Serne  
against snakes  
or adders.

And certaine write, that a smoake made of the dzye Serne burned, doeth dzyue away Snakes and Adders oute of that grounde.

And Palladius writeth, that the Snake and Adders, and all other venomous vermine be dzyuen away with euery sharp & stinking sauour fumed abroade.

How Toades  
may be dzyue  
away and  
killed.

And the Toades may be dzyuen away and killed (as write the Greekes and Latines) with those helps and remedies, whiche we haue before taught, in the remedies agaynst the Snakes and Adders; and therfore to recite those againe, were here superfluous.

Africanus  
practise for  
the dzyuing  
away and kil-  
ling of the  
Wackes;

And Africanus writeth, that the Wackes will not flie, by and down in that Garden, where throughe the walkes and pathes you hang of the boughes or branches of the Plane tree. And they be also killed with the onely smoke made of Iuy branches in the alleis about.

And against the chirping of the frogs, which perhaps seems to disquiet the Gardener in the Sommer nights, vie this helpe and secret, written of the Greeke Africanus, which willethe to set a bright lighte before them, or to hang a brighte Lanterne light on some tree, that the same light may shine on the, like the light of the Sunne, which causeth them by the sight therof, to cease their chirping, as hath bin tried by sundry oftentimes.

Nowe (gentle Reader) I haue here vttered those speciall incommodities whiche happen in Gardens, vnto whiche I haue adioyned the most proued and true experiences, agaynst those euills, out of the best Authours, both of the olde and new

wyters in this Arte: least that any (hauing delight

in Gardening) shoulde be frustrate of these

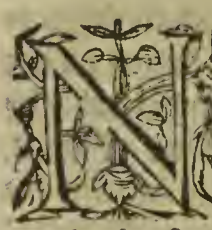
helpes. . . And thus an ende of

this firste Booke.

(:)

nothing here  
of v to me

The second Booke instructeth the  
diuerse maner of sowing, setting and or-  
dering of the most pot-herbs, floures. &c. with  
the care and secreats taught, aswell for  
the health of the body, as to the  
pleasure and delight  
of the eye.



OW that I haue ended my first booke, suche as  
it is: I minde here to enter into the seconde. In  
whiche shall be entreated of the diuerse maner,  
care, ordering, & diligēce to be bestowed, both in  
the sowing, setting, and remouing of the moste  
pot-herbs, swēte smelling hearbes, and pleasant floures, aswell  
foz the vse of Physicke, as foz pleasure to carry in the hande, &  
otherwise to serue the Pot. And these, by diligence of the Au-  
thor, gathered out of y<sup>e</sup> treasures of the best wryters (of y<sup>e</sup> Grækes  
& Latines) in this Art: and experienced by the oftē practises, of  
sūry skillfull Gardners in diuers Realmes & Countreis, vnto  
our great vse and commoditie. And such woꝛthie secreats also  
taught in these mattets, as the like hath not bin vttered in the  
Englishe toungue. And foz that I meane not to sēme long in  
reherfall of the benefite of these vnto mans health and delighte:  
I minde therefore (as the moste number of wryters doe) to en-  
treate first of that wel knowne herbe, (both vnto the Citie and  
Country) named the Lettuce: whose nature, care, properties,  
and benefite also to the health, shall after appeare.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secreats of the Lettuce. Cap. j.

AND firste the Garden Lettuce (of whiche wēe mynde here  
to entreate) doeth delighte to be sowne in a fatte and well  
wrought grounde, being dinged befoze, and moyste at the so-  
wing: foz so it appeareth by the fourth day after the sowing, so  
that

upper 7

that the seedes be not otherwise burnt, and the grounde drie  
fruitfull.

And it may also be sowne all the yeare throughe, if so be the  
grounde be well dunged and dressed, and the seedes often wa-  
tered, for so they come the faster and plentifuler vp. And those  
seedes whiche you sowe in the Harvest, may well be removed  
and sette againe in the moneth of December, and in beddes (if  
you will,) with other hearbes. For so it well abideth the colde  
Winter time, and is also much comforted thereby, for that  
it maye well agree and come vpp with other hearbes, vnto  
the seede time. And to make it spreade of breadth in the gro-  
wing, you muste then remoue eche from other, when as fire  
leaves be sprung vp, and set them a good space asunder, wherby  
they may spreade the larger. And the pressing downe of them,  
must especially be done in warme dayes, in lightly cutting the  
leaves about, & after laying the sharden of Tyles, or Tufts of  
earth, to presse them downe.

And least the Lettuce shoulde growe harde, it oughte to be  
often sette, and plentifullye watered, for by that meanes the  
leaves will growe both tenderer and softer, so that the rootes  
befoze, be stieped and couered with softe dung in the newe set-  
ting againe. And both Palladius and Columella write, that if  
throughe the Beds and rounde aboute them, be often strewed  
the riuer or Sea sande, that the leaves will so become white, if  
the leaves befoze be gathered and tyed vpp together. And to  
make the Lettuce growe lowe by the grounde, and to be thicke  
and broade in the heade, you muste then remoue and sette them  
when as they be growen vp an handfull highe, and often clip  
the tops of the leaves rounde aboute, and in the newe setting a-  
gaine, scrape faire the rootes of the Lettuce, and after dip them  
in softe and newe Cowe dung, and set them so in the grounde,  
whiche after the setting, often and plentifullye water, and in  
the growing vp alwaies keepe vnder, by clipping the toppes  
of the leaves, and laying tyle sharden on the heades of them,  
for by that meanes they encrease into a breadth, and not to a  
height,

And

And they be also made the sweeter in eating, if in the growing they be often remoued and set again, & that in the setting, as they beginne to growe vpp of some heighth, that then the leaues to be tyed vppe close together, and beeing growen a little moze in heighth, that then to presse them downe, by laying Tyle shardes, or some other thinges somewhat waightie on them. And to make them pleasant of smell, take and putte the seedes within the swæte Cytrone Skede, and sette them so in the grounde, or else stiepe the seede (for certayne dayes) in eyther swæte or Rosewater. And here note, (that of this) the leaues become the tenderer, if the rootes before the setting againe, be dipped in newe Cow dung, (as is abouesaide) and watered often with running water, or for two days before the plucking the leaues close bounde vp together,

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

And now as touching the Phisicke helpes of this hearbe, you shall fynde vnderstand, that the same is colde and temperately mozt in the seconde degree. And Aegineta writteth, that the Lettuce doth manifestly coole and moisten, and prouoke sleepe, and as it doth nourish like other pot hearbes, so doth it cause good bloude in man.

siere. 2  
good bloude. 9

And yet the often eating rawe of this hearbe, doeth harme colde stomacks, and causeth dunnesse of sight, and therefore of them to be oftner eaten sodden, than rawe.

Dim. sight. 9

But the cholericke, may so safely cate them raw, as sodden, and find commoditie to the body, by eating of them rawe. And the eating of them while they be yong, is moze profytable to the stomacke, and increaseth the milke in womens breasts, but when the same is growen to be hard in the eating, then it is both dry and bitter, and throughe his heate, then the moze opening, and yet doeth the eatyng then engender euill bloude, and so causeth harme to such which often eat therof, as by hindring the sight, & corrupting the matter of Sperme. And the eating of them whyles they be yong and tender, doth helpe an ague, so well sodden as being eaten raw.

milke in wo. breast. 9

Sperme. 11

agne. 9

And sodden with vineger, and a little Saffron putte to the same, dothe helpe both the stopping of the Liuer and milt. Also caten rawe, or else sodden, and being myxed with vineger and Sugar, doeth open the Liuer and Bilte, causeth good bloude, and helpeth the tertian ague.

no 29 sept. 9

And the Lettuce sodden and myxed wryth orle Oliue, dothe heale the dyoply being eaten wryth meate. And a Plaster made of Lettuce,

dropsey. 9

H.

wryth

7 Impostumes  
1 milke  
2 S...  
4 ...  
5 ...  
6 ...  
7 ...  
8 ...  
9 ...  
10 ...  
11 ...  
12 ...  
13 ...  
14 ...  
15 ...  
16 ...  
17 ...  
18 ...  
19 ...  
20 ...  
21 ...  
22 ...  
23 ...  
24 ...  
25 ...  
26 ...  
27 ...  
28 ...  
29 ...  
30 ...  
31 ...  
32 ...  
33 ...  
34 ...  
35 ...  
36 ...  
37 ...  
38 ...  
39 ...  
40 ...  
41 ...  
42 ...  
43 ...  
44 ...  
45 ...  
46 ...  
47 ...  
48 ...  
49 ...  
50 ...  
51 ...  
52 ...  
53 ...  
54 ...  
55 ...  
56 ...  
57 ...  
58 ...  
59 ...  
60 ...  
61 ...  
62 ...  
63 ...  
64 ...  
65 ...  
66 ...  
67 ...  
68 ...  
69 ...  
70 ...  
71 ...  
72 ...  
73 ...  
74 ...  
75 ...  
76 ...  
77 ...  
78 ...  
79 ...  
80 ...  
81 ...  
82 ...  
83 ...  
84 ...  
85 ...  
86 ...  
87 ...  
88 ...  
89 ...  
90 ...  
91 ...  
92 ...  
93 ...  
94 ...  
95 ...  
96 ...  
97 ...  
98 ...  
99 ...  
100 ...

with oyle Olive, doth mightily asswage hote Impostumes.  
And the seedes eaten of milch women in meate, doth both increas  
milke, and amenderth the sight.

Also the seedes drunke in Urne, doe procure sleepe, and the seedes  
buzled and drunke, doth stay the often imaginations of the lust in the  
sleepe, and abaterth the courage therof. And it prouoketh sleepe, if the  
seedes buzled and tempered with the mylke of a woman chyld, and  
the whyte of an Egge, be layde playsterwise on all the forehead and  
temples. And the powder of the seedes mixed with the milke of a wo  
man chyld, doe prouoke and cause sleepe. And the lyke the Seedes  
worke to hym which hath an ague: given him to drinke with warme  
water.

And the seedes given in drinke, doe for the waste parte, speedily  
help the heading of nature. And he which drinke the wyce of Let  
tuce fasting, shall not be drunke that day.

And the Lettuce plucked by by the rootes, with the left hand before  
the sunne rising, and the same layde vnder the coverings of the bed,  
the sick body not knowing therof, doth after cause the person to sleepe.  
And if syue leaues, thre, or one leaf, be layd vnto vnder the Fol  
ster of the sicke body, but in such sort, that the leafe or leaues, plucked  
of nexte the stalk, be layde beneath, and vnder his fecte, and the  
leaues plucked of from the top of it be layd vnder his head, then do  
they cause sleepe, as is abouesayd.

And the often eating of Lettuce, is both daungerous to suche wo  
men as be apt to conceiue with chyld, and such as be with chyld (as  
the auerent men wyte) they doe not onely cause barrenesse, but  
those which then be with chyld, shall after be deliuered of chylden  
farre vnlyke their fathers, in that they shall be both raging in mynd  
and foolish in witle. And therefore the much vse of them, is the lyke  
to be eschewed of such women, euen as they woude from a furious  
dogge or adder, whose biting they greatly feared. Also the very of  
ten eating of Lettuce, doth greatly harme such which be hoat v  
ned, rheumatich persons, and such which spit blood. And although the  
very often eating of the raw or sodden Lettuce, be no lesse daunge  
rous than the Beasbe Hemlocke, yet we maye often eate of them  
in the sommer, rather as a medicine, than for any nourishment, as  
they do, cole and aperten the stomack. And the eating of them doth  
make men soluble, in that through the coldnesse and moistnesse of  
them, they do cole and temper the excessive heate of the Lyuer. And  
some wyte, that the eating of Lettuce at night after other meales,  
doth the better procure sleepe that night following.

And as the manner of preparation of the Lettuce, (now in our time)  
is with vineger, salt, and Oyle, whereby to cause a better appetite to  
the meate, than to be eaten, and both to temper the heate of the blood,  
& mitigate the heat of the liuer & hart, and yet the often vse on this  
wyse, doth greatly hinder the increas of Sperme, as is abouesayd.

These hitherto, of the Physick helps, and properties of the Gar  
den Lettuce.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and Secretes, both of the Endiue  
and Succory. Cap. ij.

¶ And fyrst the Endiue and Succory haue a lyke ordyng and  
Bozelling, sauynge that the Endiue better abydeyth the colones  
of wynter.

And of this, in colde countreyes it may be sowne nearest the  
ende of haruest, and it will become whyte in the growing, if  
the same be spryncled ouer with the sande, and often watered,  
and that with the great shoures of rayne, it be after couered,  
(and washed) lying on the sande, for that it delighteth in moist-  
ture and lose grounde.

And after that sower of the leaues be sufficiently sprong vp,  
then may the same be remoued, and set agayne in a well sun-  
ged place.

For there be some wynters, which will the rootes to be dipped  
in fresh Cow dung, befoze the setting agayne in the earth.

¶ The Phisick helpes of Endiue.

Endiue coolcth and dryeth in the seconde degree. And the leaues &  
seedes be vled in medicines, but the roote hath no property at all in  
Phisick. And the greene leaues be profitable, but the dry leaues haue  
no vse in medicines, for that they then worke nothing at all.

And Endiue comforteth the hart, in that it coolcth and delayeth the  
burning thereof, agaynst the diseases of the liuer, without harme, in  
that by nature, it hath such a qualitie and property of it self. And a-  
gaynst that disease called the Kings euill, take the syrupe of the En-  
diue simple, with the which mixe the water of the decoction of harts  
tongue, which giue to the patient to drinke, for it is a singular remedy.

And the iuyce of the leaues annoynted on burning pusses, doth  
qualifre the heate of them.

And the hearbe brused and layd laystwyse on hote impostumes  
doth mightily helpe.

And the hearbe layde without on the syde, doth delay and cease the  
heate of the liuer.

And if the greene hearbe can not be had, then aply the seedes, lay-  
ynge them brused, on such hote griefes, which greatly helpe.

*roote of the hart  
& liuer*

*Kings euill heal.*

*pusses.*

*apostumes.*

*liuer.*

*releas liuer.*

R. ij.

And

44 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

1. Endive in lilly.  
 2. rask passid.  
 3. holly  
 4. impostume.  
 5. holly swellinge.  
 6. hadarthe.  
 7. rasker  
 8. Sperm.

And the Endive may in like manner be eaten as the Lettuce, as eyther any way be eaten raw, or sodden with meat. And the Endive sodden with vineger, doth bynde the belly. And brused with vineger, and that layde on the left Dapye, doeth helpe the Cardiake passion without doubt. And it helpeth the holy frye, hote Impostumes, and hote swellings, if the same be brused and mixed with Ceruse and vineger, and so layde plasterwise on such places. And the iurce of it mixt with Vineger and Rose water, doth ease the payns of the head coming of heate: and the hearbe drunke with Wyne, doeth amende both the default and grieffe of the Liver and Bladder.

And in the spitting of blood, and the excesse of Sperme, it helpeth by drinking of it by two or thre dayes together. And all such partes which may be holpen by cooling, may with the iurce of it, the Ceruse and vineger mixed together, and so annoynted on those places, greatly auare.

9. Strindme  
 10. Strindme  
 11. Strindme

And the distilled water of Endive drunke vnto the quanttie of two ounces, at a certayn tyme, and that morning and Euening, doth help the straightnesse and stopping of the brest.

12. plague  
 13. kizz evil  
 14. holly  
 15. paine  
 16. p...  
 17. p...

And in the same manner and quantity drunke, is profytable to women with chylde, for that it strengtenth them, and amendeth their senses, and the same water drunke morning and Euening, vnto the quanttie of four or fyve ounces at a tyme, doth help the plague, putting away the Kinges euill, and ceaseth thys, being more largelye drunke of, and qualifieth the burning of the Liver.

And it helpeth agaynst the payne of the syde, and the pricking which is felt about the hart, if there be drunke thre or lower ounces at a tyme, both morning and euening. These hitherto of the properties of Endive.

The Phisicke helpes of Succorie,

18. binding  
 19. Dige. h  
 20. gont  
 21. holly  
 22. Sopping  
 23. mlt

Succorie is of a colde and drye qualitty, and somewhat more than the Endive. But Aegine, writeth, that it cooleth and dryeth in the first degree, and hath the qualitty of bynding.

And nowe this hearbe sodden with Wyne, and eaten with meate, profyteth the stomach, and helpeth digestion, and the flowers broosed with the Roes, and layde plasterwise on the Gout, doe both with ease the payne thereof. And this plaster layde on the holye ste, doth delay the great heate thereof. And a potion made of the iurce of Succorie, Endive, and hartes tongue mixed together with Suger, and after boyled with a little water and vineger together, and if any use the same oftentimes, it doth help the stopping of the Liver, and mlt: So that after the same be taken the purging pulcs of Rubarbe and (after that) the same comforter, which they name the three Saunders prepared of the Apothecaries, and the iurce of the Succorie boiled, doth lose the belly, and helpeth the stomach, the liver, and the kidneys. And it putteth away the pestilent pulcs, if linnen cloaths dipped in the water of it, be layde on those pulcs, and the hearbe brused

17. p...



bruised with the Roote, & of the same made flat rounde Cakes, which after being mixed and dissolved in Rose water, annoynt any scabbed place therewith, and it will both heale, and make the skinne sayze after. And the flowers of Succory, cast amongst a heape of Dillmyers or Aneg, will soone after become so redde as blood. And the flower of Succory, gathered timely in the morning, and after distilled in B. l. neo Maria, doth helpe diuersc diseases of the eyes, as the pinne and web, the mist of the eyes hyndering the sight, the viccers of the eyes, and many other diseases of the eyes.

scabs. 7  
pishires 2  
Diseases of eyes. 9

These hitherto, of the properties of the Succorie.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the hearbe Blete. Ca. iij.

And fyrst of the Blete, there be two kyndes, the one red or black, and the other whyte, for the red in the growing becommeth so red, both in the leaues and stalkes, as the scarlet in a manner, which after the longer growing, becommeth purple of colour, and in the ende vnto a black colour, through whiche the same of some is named the black Blete. And the whyte groweth lyke to the whyte Bletes, both in the stalkes & leaues, being vnsauorie, and byteth very little, or of a small sharpnes. And both kyndes doe well spring vp in a Garden, and that speedily.

And it may be sowne in any grounde, but the rather in a wel dressed ground, and after the same be well sprong vp, it needeth not after to be weeded or stoned.

And yet some wyte, that the Blete sogeth in a fatte ground being wel turned with dung, for so they say it will best prosper. And when they be sprong vp vnto their seeding, then they decay not after in that ground, for that they yearelye renewe through the falling of the leedes. So that if a man would he shal scarcely weede them out of his grounde, but that they will continue many yeres after, without any further trauayle. And Palladius thinketh it best to be sowne in March, and after it once prospereth, (after the sowing or setting) it neuer decayeth, as he wyrteth.

D. iij.

¶ The

# 97 Secretes in sowing and planting

## ¶ The Phisicke helps.

Blete which commonly men eat, is colde and moyst in the seconde degree. And now the same is sometymes eaten with meate, so that it byst be sodden in water, and fryed with Oyle and butter, and after that seasoned with salt and Viniger, or Veriayce, and then the eating of it in such sort doth little harne, if the same be not often vbled. For this by experience hath bene noted sundry tymes, that the often eating of it (although in such sorte prepared) doe cause vomiting, payne of the bowels and stomacke, and the scouring of choller by fluxe. And a plaster made of it with Oyle, and that layde on the place of the myit, doth helpe the greefe thereof. And by eating of this hearbe as we haue abouesayde, it doth loose the bellie of proprietie, when as the same is become colstue or bound by any clammy matter. These hitherto of the properties of the Blete.

11. vomiting  
12. paine of bowels  
13. Stouring of choller  
14. griefe of myit  
15. loose the bellie

## ¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the hearbe

### Spinage. Cap. iiii.

**A**ND fyrst the Spinage is sowne very wel in the moneth of September and October, to serue both in the winter tyme and Lent following, in well dunged ground. And the Spinage also may be sowne alone in beds, the ground being fat and wel turned in with dung. And when the same is well come vp, then may you cut away the one halfe of the turfe at one tyme, and the other halfe at another tyme. For so the vertue and commodity of it will indure a long tyme.

## ¶ The Phisick helps.

Spinage is colde and moyst in the ende of the fyrst degree, and the same sodden and eaten with meate, doth soften the hardnesse of the belly, and taketh away the paynes and greefes both of the brest and lunges. Also it nourisheth better then doth the Orach, as wyrteth Serapion, for that it doth qualifie choller, cleanse the body, and strengthen the stomack, and the decoction of this hearbe drunk, expelleth y curst humoys, and cauleth the ealve drawing of bryeth. But the often and daily eating of it with meate, doth ingender Melancholy, like as the Lettuce doth. And wholoever shall haue grieuous paynes of the back, and a colstue belly, let them eat of this hearbe sodden, and drinke of

10. paine of brest & myit  
11. qualifie choller  
12. cleanse the body  
13. strengthen the stomack  
14. expelleth y curst humoys  
15. cauleth the ealve drawing of bryeth  
16. paine of the back  
17. colstue belly

supp.

Suppe of the broth, and they shall haue ease and remedye in short tyme by Gods helpe. And the hearb helpeth the payne of the thioate, couming of bloud and red choler. These hitherto of the properties of the Spinage.

James brood .g.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Orach, or Arage. Cap. v.

And first the hearb named Orach, or Arage, may be sowne from the beginning of the Spring, vnto Haruest: that is, from Februarpe, Marche, Aprill, and all other monethes following, vnto Haruest. But of some it is sowne in the moneth of December, in earth well trimmed and dunged, and the better it commeth vp, being thinne sowne. Also it muche delighteth to be often fed with plenty of moisture, and if the season be drye, then in continuall moysture. And the seedes of the Orach, may well be kept for sower yeares. But the seedes as sone as they be strawne or sowne abroad, muste be covered with earth. And the weedes growne among the yong plantes, must be till an ende plucked vp by the rootes. And it requyrez not to be remoued: yet the same groweth the better, if it be set thinner: and Palladius willet it to be sowne in Aprill, and to be watered all hote monethes thozow vnto haruest, for that it ioyeth in continuall moysture.

time

10 m

water

¶ The Phisick helpes.

The hearbe named Orach or Arage, as wyrteth Aeglaet, doth mouen in the seconde degree, and cooleth in the first, of the which cause it softneth the belly, & the seedes do cleanse, through which they profit the stopping of the iouer, and helpe the Faundise.

Coste belly .g.  
stoppis & huer .g.  
faundise .g.

And the Arage brused, and mixed wpyth Honny, doth take awaye the payne of the Goute, if the same be layd playsterwise on the greete.

gout .g.

And Mace affirmeth the lyke, that the Hearbe brused and myxed with salte mytre, honny, and viniger, & the same layd playsterwise on a hote gout, doth ease the raging paine therof: & the seedes of the Arage brused, and drunk with waier and honny myxed together, doth help the the ading of the gall. Likewise the iuyce layd on the hote fire, and on any other inflammation, doth cease and qualify it. And this hearb appli- ed vnto the womans priuie place, doth amend the euils within, and ceaseth forthwith the payn of the matrice: & sodden like vnto anothe

gout .g.

sheddy gat .g.

h. h. fine .g.

pama matrice .g.

¶.iii.

poits

48 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

1. pome  
2. Foul things  
3. thorne  
4. wader  
5. rousin  
6. fingers  
7. Strangle  
8. worme  
9. mung  
10. mel liver  
11. louse bety  
12. name of harte  
13. agne

potte hearbe, and so eaten. doeth loose the colliueneffe of the belly, proceeding of heate, and allwageth diuerse swellinges. And the hearb layd playster wise on any member harmed either with thorn, splinter of wood, or nayle, doth after draw out the same without payne, and healeth the wounde. And this hearbe boyled with honye, and layde on rough nayles of the fingers, doth after loose them without payne: and the seedes often drunke, doe helpe such whiche straightly fetchetheir wynde, and the same also drunke, doth expell worms, and prouoketh vomiting. And the hearbe eaten doth help such as haue a hote liuer. And if any eateth the hearbe Mercurie, and Arage, sodden together lyke Bozredge, which if he often eate of this porredge, it doth both lose the beetle, and taketh away the pinching payne of the Bladder. And if any often vse to eate of Arage, hearbe Mercurie, & the Beetes sodden together, he shal be deliuered of the ague in short tyme after. These hitherto of the hearbe Arage.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Beetes. Cap. vj.

¶ And fyrst the Beetes desyre a fat earth, for so they best ioye. And the same which is eaten with meate, may be sowne in the moneths of December, January, February, and Marche, pea, and all the yeare throug (in a manner) it maye be sowne, if the ground before be well dressed, and turned in with dung. And when they be come by thicke together, then may they be remoued, and set thinner asunder, but rather they oughte then to be remoued, when as foure or fyue leaues be sprong vp, and at the setting agayne be dipped in new Cowdung, for by that meanes they grow whyte. And they delight also to be often remoued, and digged about, for so they prosper the better: and a man may solwe them in that ground, where Melons, Citrons, or Gourdes be, and when they be a little come by, then to waede them often, that they maye appeare to growe alone. And those Beetes which be sowne for seedes, be aptest sowne in the month of August, and remoued after in the moneth of January, in the furrowes or low places of the garden, for so they bring forth the better Seedes. And note that the Beetes bring forth no seedes of any value in the fyrste yeare, but better in the seconde yeare, and best in the thyrde yeare, which then ought to be reserued, eyther to eate or other wyle. And the seedes endure for fouer yeares in good effect.

2. yeare seede  
3. best

¶ The

¶ The Phisick helps.

Beetes is colde and moist in the thyrde degree, and Ingendereth good bloud, and the whyte hath the propertie to purge and clense all the euill humours of the body. And the head washed with the water, in which the whyte Beetes be sodden, doth clense the heade of the Dandrie, or that lyke to bzanne on the head, and the often eating of this hearbe is not good, soz that it increaseth euill humours, as well in the healthfull, as in the sick persons: and the hearb is better commended sodden than raw, soz the stomach. And sodden with Mustard seede, doth helpe the disease of the spleene: and the iurce of it, doeth qualitie the holy fyre. And the roote of the Beete sodden, if of the same be dropped thre or foure drops, hote into the eares, doth help the payne of them. And the iuyce of the Beete taken with the seedes of Cumine, or Dill, doth after put away the grypings of the belly, and the iuyce drawne by by the nose, with the oyle of bitter Almōds, doth purge the head: and the iurce rubbed on the gummes, doeth cease the raging payne of the teeth. And this hearbe profiteth by medicine soz that it nourisheth little, and by much eating of the Beete, it doth gnaw and torment the stomach: and the Beete groweth brode if befoze it be growne by with a stalke, there be layde some brode slate stone or tyle, to make it to grow into a bredth, through y waight layde on it. And now these hethereto of the properties of the Beetes.

good bloud. 9.  
 all humours. 9.  
 and y<sup>e</sup> head. 9.  
 all humours. 7.  
 spleene. 90.  
 holy fyre. 9.  
 payne of eares. 9.  
 griping belly. 9.  
 purge head. 9.  
 payne of teeth. 9.  
 gummes & stomach. 7.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Colewortes. Cap. vij.

And fyrst, the Colewortes come by in euery ayre, and may be sowne or remoued all the yeare thzough, in which time the ground shall not be frosen, or so much dzyed, that it cannot be digged or dzessed. And the seedes also continue, and may be kept soz foure yeares, and they also ioy in a meane fat ground, dunged and digged. But it abhozreth the stiffe claye, and grauelly grounde, and refuseth also, the chalky and sandie ground. And it ioyeth in dung striked about the roote, & commeth well sozwarde by weeding, (and the stronger it wareth) if it be well couered about with earth. And it delighteth both in colde, and raynie countries. And when sire leaues be come by, then maye it be remoued: but you must bestryke the roote befoze, with softe Colwdung. And you may remoue it twyce, when as it is in the greatest leanes, which so causeth it to growe the bigger,

of the r. mov.

A.

and

42 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

and to yeld the moze seeds. And if you can, let the same be done in a warme day, if it be in the wynter tyme, & toward the evening, if you doe the same in the Sommer. And those also which be sowne in December, February, March, April, and Maye, may serue all the Sommer and Wynter, vntill they be killed by long frostes, and ouermuch colde. And not onelye the yong Colewoytes set in March or April, but also those which be set in June July, and August, shall bee in Wynter great, so that they be set alone where nothing else is, & that in the growing, the heds or tops of the leaus be often clipped and cut of, which so letteth their growing into heighth, & maketh them grow into a brodenesse and thickenesse in the head. And the thinner they be set, the bigger they will be: and the thicker they be sette, the smaller they will be. And therefore they must be set thre fote asunder, the one from the other. Also beware that you couer the Colewoytes well about with earth, in the new setting, for by lying bare of the earth, the plant sowne after dyeth. And now all these afore wrytten, both in the ordyng, dressing and nature of it, may lykewyse be vnderstanded of the Cabbage, to be ordred and used.

*the red tops*

¶ The Phisick helpes.

*of making water*

*swellings & canker*

Colewoytes be colde and moyst in the seconde degree, although of Auicene thought to be cold and drye: and now agaynst the hardnes of making water, take of the Colewoytes, whiche put into scaldyng water, and boyling them a little, so that they be halfe rawe, and after powyng the water almost cleane from the, vnto which put a little oyle, salt, and cumine, and after heat the same together, a little moze & whē this broth is somewhat cold, then sup of the same, & care lykewyse of the Colewoytes (so soone as it hath fryst sodden) & this darly do vntil you be thozowly holpen. And agaynst all swellings, & al vlcers, by use the Colewoytes which haue but yong and tender stalkes and leaues, those lay plaisterwysse on cankers, and it wil both purge & heale the, which no other medecine of property doth, and yet before the same be layd on, the canker must be washed with warme water twyse a daye, and

and the same yong Colewortes brused and layd on twyce a day, and with the same remedy also may be holpen tose and brused places, and boch vicers & cankers on the paps, if the same be often applyed, and vled, as is aboue said. And if the vicer be such, that it cannot abide the shar penceffe thereof, then may it be mingled with barley meale, and so layd plaisterwise on. And the raw Colewort eaten with the heat be Grace, or Rue, & the hearb Coliander mied together, or a litle salt & barley meale with Drumell mied together, and with the whole to anoynt the greced place, doth ease the gowte, and helpe the ache of the ioynts in a short tyme. And for deafenes of the eares, bruse y same hearbes with Wyne, and the iurce pessed out, droppc warme into the eare, and the patient shall fynd ease shortly after. And the Colewort sodden in pleasaunt wyne, and that drunk, bringeth downe the termes in women.

And the iurce of the same hearbe mixed with the purest Hony, doth helpe certayne paynes of the eyes, if the same be dropped in the corners of them. And the iurce drunk for pl. dars with whyre wyne, doth cure both the Jaundise, and the diseace of the milke, as hath bene experienced. And three partes of the iurce of this hearb, & two partes of allume infused in viniger, and mied togilher, doth heale both y foule scutuinesse and leappy, by anoynting therevpon. And the iurce of the colewortes mixed with the meale of the Fenigrecke and vineger, and that layde plaisterwysse, or annoynted on the gowt, aches of y ioynts, and fylthy vicers, doth ease, cleanse, and heale them.

And the iurce also drawne by by the nose, doth purge the head. And the iurce of the colewort drunk with wyne, doth helpe the byte of an Adder, or snake: and the iurce drunk with red wyne doth helpe the cough, and the iurce taken with orle, and holden a good while in the mouth, doth heale the blistering thereof. And the leaues of the Colewort eaten raw, doc make a person sleepe wel without dreameing, and the greene Stalkes and Roote of the Colewortc rosted vnder the hote imbers, and tempered with olde barrowes grease (the same applyed in Playster forme) doth heale the conuinuall payns and Ritches in the sydes.

And eaten raw with viniger, it doth helpe the diseaced with the Splene, if the same be often vled.

And Auicenn wryteth, that eatē alone it doth ingēder troubled bloud and melancholy, and his nourishment is small, but the more and tenderer it is sodden with fat flesh, or Hennes flesh, the better and holisomer it is to be eaten.

And the fyrst broth of this hearbe eaten, doth soften the belly, & pro- uoketh vyne: but the eating of the substance, doth bynd the belly: & if you will make drye a moyst belly, then, after the hearbe hath boiied a while, and that the first water be poured forth, poure in quickly the other seething water, & so boyle it new agayne, vntill it become very

brused partes. q.  
vices. g.

joint & aches of  
ioints. g.  
Deafnes. g.

termes in women. g.

payne of eyes. q.

jaundise. q.  
diseases of the milke. q.

leproy. & scutinesse. q.

gowt. vthers. q.

purge head. q.

bit of adder or snake. q.

cough. q.  
bit of bark of y mouth. q.

sleepe without dreame.

stitches of sydes.

diseases of the splene. q.

melancholy. n.

soft belly. q.

provoketh vyne. q.  
bynd belly. n.

soft

soft and tender, and then eate of the substance thereof, seasoned with pepper and salt, and so it brndeth the belly. But in eating the broth and substance together, it then worketh temperately, for the broth of the fyrst seething Colewortes eaten alone, doeth loose the belly, and the substance tenderly sodden and eaten, doeth bynd the belly. And by this appeareth, that the broth of y<sup>e</sup> fyrst seething of this hearbe, doth lose the belly, and the broth of the latter seething doeth bynde the belly. And Plinie wyrteth, that the leaues of the Colewortes bruised, and layde playsterwise, doe ueruariously heale the woundes of Dogges: and the Colewort tenderly sodden, and giuen to yong children to eate, doth cause them the sooner to go on fooie: and if you wil drinke much at a feast or banquet, and not to be drunk, (and to suppe well and freshly, at the Supper after) then eat before your going to Supper, raw Coleworthe leaues with vineger, so much as you will, and after you haue supped, then eate agayne soure or fyue rawe leaues, and they will after make you so full and hungry, as though you had neyther drinke nor eaten any thing at your supper before.

wonder  
children to go  
sooner  
drinke

And of this you may drinke so much wyne as you list, and not be overcome or drunke with wyne, yea, make great wagers bypon the same. And if any droppeth certayne drops of wyne into Colewortes, boyling fast on the fyre, it forthwith cealeth (from boyling any more) and chaungeth the colour, euen as a dead thing in it selfe. These be the herto of the properties of the Colewortes.

wine  
make  
the rest  
of

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Lande Cresses. Cap. viij.

¶ And the Lande Cresses is an hearbe which the Germanys doe vse in their Sallets, but it may not be eaten withoute the cooling hearbes, lyke as the Lettuce, Sorrell, & Purcelane, which doe so temper the spery vertues, as Galen wyrteth. And now the Lande Cresses may be sowne with Lettuce, for it soioyeth and commeth by the better, and both also delight in the often watring, and in a shadowie place, where the Sunne doth shyne little vpon, and hateth the dung. And Palladius willet it to be sowne in the moneth of January.

hot herb  
water  
shad-

¶ The Phisick helpes.

Land Cresses, as wyrteth Platearius, is hote and drye in the fourth degree, and the seedes doe especially serue vnto the vse of medicine, and may well be kept for fyue yeates. And the greene hearbe al is of great effect, being dreyed somewhat before the ministering of it: and now the seedes haue the properties of heating and drying by superfluous

Thomas Ward  
in 1711



huous humo ur g, and worketh in a manner so much as both the mustarde seede: and also the seedes bzused and drunke in wyne, doeth expell the dead rongling, and drunke with Winger, it delruereth the swelling of the splene, and eaten with the best Hony, they do help the cough and open the bzest: and the seedes chawed, and holden in the mouth, doe helpe the Palse of the tongue. And the Cresses maye not be eaten alone, as we haue abouesayde, for that it diminisheth mans strength, and ingendereth euill humours. Further, the seedes doe stave the distilling or running of the head without harme, if they be taken whole, and the powder of the seedes drawne by by the nose doe purge the bzayne, and helpe the payns of the head: and the sedes helpe the Palsie, if they be sodden in wyne in a little linnen bagge, laid so hote on the palse place as may be suffered, and in the litharge or sleeping out of measure, let a snese be made of the powder of the seedes, and blowne vp. And agaynst the paynes of the hip, and payns of the chollick, proceeding of colde, boyle the seedes in a bag of wyne, and lay that hote vnto the greened place, and the lyke disease, and the strangury, the greene hearbe sodden in Wyne and Oyle togather, and the same layd hote on the belly. And the hearbe drunke with mintes in wyne, doth drue forth both the long and flat wormes in Weasles. and agaynst the hardnesse of fetching of bzeth, & the cough, seeth the seedes of Dyzany in pleasaunt wyne. And the iuyce of the hearbe annoynted doth stave the Meading of the heares of the heade, and the iuyce of the hearbe dropped in the eare, doth helpe the ache and payne in the teeth. And the often eating of this hearbe in salers, doth gyue a sharpnesse and readinesse of wpt. These hitherto of the propertye of the Land Cresses.

all humors  
throat out of head  
swelling spleen  
rough eye  
palsie of tongue  
vnto  
pain head  
palsie  
litharge  
pains  
strangury  
wormes  
bad breath  
rough  
both head  
teeth  
readinesse

¶ Of the ordning, care, and secretes of the  
Parcely. Cap ix.

Ward  
mory

¶ A D sytt the Parcely seede being new, is long before the  
appearanuce about the earth, for that it appeareth not in  
forty or fytie dayes after the sowing, as wytteth Plinie. And  
yet the olde seedes doe swoner come vp. And nowe where the  
seedes be sowne, they doe plentifully come vp, and thicker to  
gither, and after they once prosper in that ground, they sildome  
decay, but continually renue and increase in more plentie. And  
the seedes also prosper, being sowed so well in cold, as hote pla  
ces, and in what earth you list, as wytteth Palladius. And yet  
it togeth to be continually watred, for that by the watring, it

Dayes  
-10  
and earth  
water

Will

ward

# 46 Secretes in sowing and planting

wareth the stronger, and cometh up the faster, and regardeth no ayre nor ground, and the seedes, as wyteth Columella, may be sowne neare to Ditches, or running Waters, or Welles. And if you will haue it grow big and haue large leaues, then as Florētius wyteth, take so many seeds of the Parcelly as you can well holde betwene thre of your fyngers, & tye them together in a thynne linnen cloth, which after set in dung and earth mingled together, and that put into a shallow hole, and it will after grow up big and brode of leafe. And it will also grow of a maruelous bignes, if after it be come up, you dig up the earth round about it, and strew the chaffe of Corne about the Rote, and water the same often.

big leaf  
means

the root  
means

the leaf  
brod

And if you will haue the leaues of the Parcelly grow crisped, then before the sowing of them, kuffe a tenis bal with y<sup>e</sup> seedes, and beat the same well against the ground, whereby the seedes may so be a little brused, and then sow them in the ground, or when the Parcelly is wel come up, go ouer y<sup>e</sup> bed with a waighe ty roller, whereby it may so presse the leaues downe, or else treade the same downe with thy fete.

And Palladius wyteth, y<sup>e</sup> the male of this hearb hath blacker leaues and a shorter roote, but the female hearbe hath more crisped and harder leaues, a bigger stalke, and sharpe and hote in taste. And Palladius also willethe the seede of this herbe, to be sowne in the monthes of February, March, Aprill and Maye, and that thicke together, and to be often watered.

## The Phisick helpes.

Parcelly of the gardē, is hote in the second degree, & dry in the third. And now the parcelly hath the property of piercing, & of this prouoketh the vyne; and both the seedes and roote preuaile against the stone: also take the roote of the Parcelly, which being drye, bruse well, and after drinke the same with pure wyne, and it wil cause a good braine, and good memory, and purge the blood.

And the same drinke bringeth downe the termes of women, and the seedes eaten do take away the swelling of the stomack, help the dropsie, drye and pierce the euill humours, and consume them. Also they cleanse the liuer and put away the paynes of the lynes and bladder.

And

provoke vyne  
g. stone

g. brine  
g. memory  
g. blood

g. termes  
g. swelling  
g. liuer

g. paynes  
g. lynes  
g. bladder

And a sallet made of Parcelly, Sorrel, & vineger mixed together, doth help the burning of the ague. And the hearb giuen either raw or sodden, to ease, doth helpe the stopping of the bladder, prouoketh vrine, clenseth the kidneies, and draweth downe the termes, loseth the wynde of the body, taketh away the grypings of the belly, and helpeth the swelling of the stomacke, also the seedes be principall, the roote nexte, and the leaues be the thyrd in working.

And the Parcelly layde in plaster forme, with bread on that soze, named the holy fyre, doth heale the same. And as well the leaues as rootes sodden, do help the straightnesse of making water, and the disease of the Kidneies. And Plinie wyrteth, that the seedes brused & anoynted with the whyte of an Egge on the rarys, or sodden in water, and so drunke, doth helpe the disease of the Kidneies. And the seedes giuen in whyte Wyne, doth help the Jaundise.

And neyther women in chylbed, nor milch nurses, nor women with thyrld, may eate Parcelly with their meates, for feare of hyndering of conception, drying vp the milke in the breasts, & causing the pongling to haue the falling sicknesse. And yet the Parcelly throwne into fyre pouders, doth reuyue and strengthen the sick filth.

And the chawing of the fresh & greene Parcelly, doth cause a swete smelling bzeath, so that the chawing of this hearbe, doth amend a foule Rinking bzeath. And therefore is this hearbe very commendable for women hauing a strong bzeath, both to chew and cary the hearbe about them, that thair strong sauour and smell of bzeath, may so be abated, and caused also to bzeathe forth a sweter bzeath. These hitherto, of the properties of Parcelly.

Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Sperage. Cap. x.

As for the Sperages (after the mynde of the learned Greekes) oughte to be sowne in fatte and well dinged ground, in the spring tyme, and so manye Seedes sowne together, as you may well take vp with thre of your fyngers, and that eche be set in little furrowes straighte out, and lightye covered with earth. And Didimus wyrteth, that the Sperages soy in a fatte and moyst ground, and wel turned in with dung, and to be sowne in the spring tyme, in furrowes thre fyngers long, and that in eche to be sowne two or thre Graynes together, and that halfe a fote asunder. And that they neede no other diligence and care in fyyst yeare, but onelye to rake and digge by the wædes cleane from them. And after forty dayes, the small Rotes will be so folded, and tyed one to another, that

aque.  
vrine q.  
termes q.  
wynde q.  
grypings q.

holy fire q.  
vrine  
kidneies

jaundise.

Josephus voc. n.  
milk dried n.  
falling sickness n.  
stronge for firing  
water breath q.  
a strong breath q.

spring

## 56 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

that they will seeme to be fastned and ioyned altogether in one, and of this is named of the auncient Gardeners a Spunge.

And if the places shall be drye in which you purpose to sowe the Seedes, then steepe the seedes in soft cow dung, layde in the bottome of the furrowes, euen as though they laye in ditches. And in very moyst places the seede ought to be sowne from the toppe of the syde, or ridge of the bedde, that the rayne maye so lightly syde of, and not water to much in the falling off. And when the Seedes be thus sowne, then the Sperages whiche grow vp in the fyrst yeare, ought to be broken off, or cut away somewhat high, least by breaking of to neare the earth, (the yong rootes being yet tender, you pluck vp the whole Spunge withall. And it must continue growing in one place for two yeares, and to be nourished with the continuall dunging, and often weeded.

And in the thyrde, and other yeares after, the Sperage may so open y<sup>e</sup> eyes of his branching, for vnles it be thus wrought, the stemmes broken off, will increase the eyes of the spunges, in such sorte, that the same will become as blynded, not suffering any Sperage after, to shote or spring forth. And now that shall you keepe, out of which you haue gathered your Seedes: and set the Spunges in the Wynter, in ashes and dung tempered together.

And there is another manner of setting the Sperages, by Spunges, which after two yeares growth, ought to be removed, and sette agayn into some open and wel dunged place. And that the furrowes be made a foote distaunt asunder, and not aboue nyne syngers deepe, in the which set the Spunges, that the earth lightly couered on them, they may easily spring vp.

And in the spring tyme when they begin to shote vp, & shew about the ground, then with an yron forked dibble, the earth round about must be rayled, that the shotes appearing, maye the easlyer come vp, and the roote loosed in the earth may grow the bigger, and after the growing vp, to be in such sort weeded, that the rootes be not weakened, or to much loosed in the earth.

And in the Wynter throughe, the yong plantes of the Sperages

rage must be covered ouer with a thicke and warme couer of strawe, whereby to defende them from the sharpe frostes, that might otherwise kill them.

And when the spring is come, and that they be further appeared, then to batten them with dung.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

Sperage doth heate and moysen, and therefore helpeth the palisie, the kings euil, and the strangurie. And nowe the fruite and sedes be vsed in medycine, and endure soure yeare in full strength. And the Sperage eaten with meate, doth helpe the stopping of the Liuer, and hardnesse of the mylte. And the roote sodden in wyne, and drinking of ten therof, doth helpe the sheading of the Gaule without doubt. And if the mouth be washed with the decoction of the Sperage, it ceaseth all the paynes both of the mouth and teeth. And profytable is the Sperage to be eaten for the stomack: and ioynd with Cumine sedes, they then putte away the swellings of the stomache and passion of the Tholike.

*Handwritten notes:*  
Sperage  
Lige. 2. 1/2  
Sperage  
in veru. mit. 1/2 p. 1. 1/2  
quale. 1/2  
1/2 h. 1/2  
to mark. 1/2  
1/2

And the eating of them, doe amende the syght, soften gentiue the belly, purge the bzeaste, the bowels, and the raynes, and maketh a good sauour in all the bodye, but the vyne then stincketh, and sodden in wine, and the same dzunke, doth helpe the paynes both of the hydneys and lornes. And the roote dzunke in white wine, doeth ease the paync of the stone.

*Handwritten notes:*  
syght. 1/2  
belly. 1/2  
purge. 1/2  
1/2  
1/2  
stone. 1/2

And certaine do affirme the same profytable for women to drinke with white wine, for the gricfe of thier pziue place. And the roote sodden in vineger, doth helpe the swelling and foule spottes of the skin, like vnto the Leapre. These hitherto of the properties of the Sperage.

*Handwritten notes:*  
gricfe of pziue place  
1/2

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Sauery. Cap. xj.

And firste the Sauerye maye be sowed in roughe and leane grounde, and in the monethes of Febzuarve and December, eyther alone, or myrte among other hearbes. And this hearbe maye bee sette in borders, eyther in slypes, or in the rootes. And is muche vsed also in meates and brothes: and therfore it may yll be spared out of the Garden.

*Handwritten notes:*  
1/2  
1/2  
1/2

h.

The

66 Secretes in sowing and planting

The Phisick helpes.

- 1. a cold stomack
- 2. a cold
- 3. Default of hourelye
- 4. wome whoe can not
- 5. it
- 6. palle
- 7. a hard dead
- 8. vomio
- 9. a paine dronke
- 10. a venemous
- 11. scall
- 12. wunde
- 13. a
- 14. termes
- 15. a

Sauerie in qualitie is hotte and drye in the second degree: and this hearbe eaten with cream, doth amende a colde stomacke by purging it, and if any drinkeh of this hearde, it helpeth and defendeth him fro falling into a sound, and taken in wine, it helpeth the stopping and other defaultes of the Luer, the mylt, and the lungs, and cleanse th also womens vniue places, but women with childe must refrayne both drinking and smelling vnto of this hearbe. And the hearbe sodden in wine, and layde on the Dalsye members, doth after remoue y griefe and payne of them, and the herbe byused and layde playsterwise on y belly (as the seconde Plinie writeth) doth expell or send forth the dead rongling, & prouoketh vaine, and drunke in wine it doeth mightlye quicken suche, as be moicled with the sleeping downe righte, so that their heades be often bathed with vineger, and the stomacke moued often to vomite, either the poulder taken in an Egge, or the hearbe drunke in wine, doth stay the same.

And the herbe drunke, doth prouaile against the King of venemous beastes.

And Dioscorides willetth, that the vse of the Sauerie in meates, doeth long preserue the body in health.

And Albumasar also writeth, that the proprietie of this herbe is, to expell and vut away windnesse, and both y swellings and the grypings of the bodie, and helpeth digestion.

Likewise, it expelleth y superfluities of y stomack, prouoketh vaine, & the monethly termes, & Marpneise, besides the weaknesse of y sight proceeded of euil moisture. These hitherto of the proprietie of Sauerie.

Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the running Tyme, Cap. xij.

- by wate
- shadaw

As for first the running Time of the Garden, delighteth to be set either in the shippes, or sowne in the seedes, under the shadow of some hedge, or else to be set in beddes, on the edge of some pond or ditch, or pitte of water, for so it prospereth and bringeth the faster, and runneth out at length.

The Phisick helpes.

- 1. termes
- 2. vaine
- 3. termes
- 4. wine
- 5. bit of venemous

The running Time is both hote and drye in the second degree, and doth so much heate, that it both prouoketh the monthly termes, and y vaine, and is also very sharp in tast. And now the running Time doth stay the distillings of the head, proceeding of a colde stomack, by drinking thereof in wine. And drunke in wine, doth draw down the termes of women, and prouoketh vaine, and helpeth also the bit of venemous beastes.

beastes, and it ceaseth the headack, by boyling the herbe in Rosewa-  
 ter, and so applying it to the heade, and especially the frensic persons,  
 and such whych be moued to sleepe much, by the mixing of vineger to  
 it, and so applying the same to the head, & the drinkeing of two Drams  
 wayght of the iurce in vineger, doth stay the bloody vomittings. And the  
 drinkeing of the seedes in wine, doth mightily proucke the vrine, and  
 expel the stone, and who that dayly drinkeeth of the herbe in wine, doth  
 breake the stone of the bladder and kydnies. And the herbe healeth y  
 sting of a Bee, if the same be layde vpon it: and the hearbe sodden in  
 wine with the iurce of the swete Lycoras, doth helpe both the cough,  
 and purgeth the breast: and sodden in wine with Annis seedes, doeth  
 heate the stomacke, putteth a way the wynde of the guttes, & helpeth  
 the strangurie. And this hearbe sodden with vineger and honnye, and  
 drinkeing thereof vnto the quantitie of a cupfull at a time, doth helpe  
 the spitting of blood. And the iurce also of the herbe mixed with Vi-  
 neger, and drinkeing thereof vnto the quantitie of foure Drammes a  
 tyme, doth the like abouefarde. And the same sodden with wyne and  
 honnye, if the same be applyed to (hote) in playster forme, doth helpe y  
 disease called the Squince. And sodden in wine and drunke, doeth o-  
 pen the stoppings of the Liuer and Splee, and prouoketh vrine. And y  
 distilled water of the running Crume drunke, vnto the quantitie of  
 thre ounces at a time, both morning and euening, doth strengthen &  
 amende the heade, the braine and the stomack, and prouoketh the ap-  
 petite to meate, putteth away the noise or rumbling of the belly, soft-  
 neth the hardnesse of the stomacke, and prouoketh vrine. And the wa-  
 ter in the same maner drunke, doth comforte the light, consumeth the  
 humors & distillations of the heade, & healeth also the one daye ague  
 (or other aile y quotidian) mixed with wozinewood water, & so drunke.  
 And the drinkeing of the same water vnto y quantitie of thre ounces  
 at a time, doth amend and helpe a cold Liuer and milt, and the Guts  
 vlcerated. And the water doth open the stopping both of the Noses  
 thrys and cares, restozeth the hearing, helpeth the gyddinesse of the  
 heade, stayeth from vomiting, putteth away the gripings of the belly  
 and bowels, also it breaketh the stone, and prouoketh vrine, by y  
 drinkeing thereof. And to conclude, it healeth brused members, by ap-  
 plying often linnen clothes dipped in water. These hyther of the pro-  
 perties of the running Crume.

¶ Of the Ordering, care, and secretes of the Lumbardie  
 Louage. Cap. xiiij.

As first this herbe named the Lumbardie Louage, ioyneth  
 to be solwen in a wel digged and dressed ground, but especi-  
 ally neare vnto a thicke hedge or wall, for that it so greatly de-  
 lighteth, and best prospereth by growing in the shadow, & neare  
 vnto some running water, And in such sozt solwe, it will come  
 by in any ground.

R. iiij.

The

headache. g  
 frensy. g  
 sleep. g  
 bloody vomittings. g  
 stone. g  
 vrine. g  
 sting of a Bee. g  
 cough. g  
 vnto breast. g  
 heate the stomack. g  
 putteth away wind of gutt. g  
 strangury. g  
 spitting of blood. g  
 squince. g  
 stopping liuer and milt. g  
 vrine. g  
 strenghten head braine  
 et stomach. g  
 appetite to meate. g  
 putteth away rumbling belly  
 soften hardnes of stomach. g  
 vrine. g  
 one daye ague. g  
 reumes. g  
 ague quoker. g  
 cold liuer and milt. g  
 gutt vlcerated. g  
 stopping of nostrils  
 et cares. g  
 gripings of belly. g  
 hardness of head. g  
 vomiting. g  
 applyed to belly. g  
 stone. g  
 vrine. g  
 vnto members. g

5 Gaden

# 68 Secretes in sowing and planting

## The Phisick helpes:

Louage is hote and drie in the second degree, & the seedes may well be kept for three yeares. And now if any drinke the seedes fasting in the morning, they after purge that person both upward and downward: and the seedes given in glister, do ease that person payned with the goute in his feete. And the seedes steiped for a night in wine, and after drunke, do sende downe the womans termes, and yet the seedes be over strong in working (taken inwardly) in that they break vicers, and open impostumes, being layde playsterwise vppon, and both in a forceable manner expell the dead yongling. And therfore the force of these seedes in the ministring, ought to be tempered and mixed wrth the seedes of fenel, and Annis, in a like waight of each vnto the Louage, for in such sorte taken inward, it neuer harmeth no person: and in applying of the seedes without the bodie, there needeth no other thing to be added vnto them. And the herbe much profiteth in a bathe if the body be rubbed with them, for so it doeth open the pores, and draweth forth euil humours, in bathing. And the seedes sodden either in wine or water, and drunke, doe open the stopping of the Liuer and Spleete. And the seedes mixed with Luminine seedes, and brused together, and drunke in wine, doth profite much, for that they amende y<sup>e</sup> stomacke, and putteth away the windynesse of the belly. And y<sup>e</sup> seedes brused and sodden in wine, with Galingale and Synamon, doeth a amende and helpe the paines or griefes, both of the Stomacke, milke, and Bowels. And the Cyzane made of the seedes, Sinamon, Rapahtike, and Galingale, with Sugar, and the same taken in wine, doe helpe the aboue sayde diseases. And the seedes drunke in wine, doe ease the payne of the Belly, put away the swelling both of the stomacke and Bowels, helpeth the bite of Snakes and Adders, and prouoketh vyne, & the sendyng down of the termes. And a bath made of this heard, the Sage, Rosemary, Mugwort, Calamint, Camomil, Belliote, Stracados, and fenigreeke, and these sodden in wine together, do helpe the Crampe, proceeding of the fulnesse of the body, the Palsie, the paine of the Goute, and the kings euill: and the distilled water drunke to the quantitie of two or thre ounces at a time, helpeth the geryngs of the sydes and stomacke, the griefe of the stone, kidneys and bladder, amendeth the horcenesse of speech, and assuageth the dangerous swelling of the throte, called the Squince. And to conclude, this water maketh the face both layre and cleare, if it be darly walhed (both morning and euening) with this water. These hitherto of the properties of the Lombardie Louage.

4 purge body  
 7 goute etc  
 7 termes  
 7 impostumes  
 4 expel dead yongling  
 draweth forth  
 all humours in  
 bathing  
 9 stop liver and  
 spleete  
 9 windy belly  
 7 paines of stomacke  
 bite of snakes &  
 adders  
 7 urine  
 7 termes  
 7 crampe  
 7 palsie  
 7 kings euill  
 7 geryngs of the  
 sydes  
 7 stone  
 7 kidneys  
 7 bladder  
 7 horcenesse  
 7 speech  
 7 squince  
 7 face  
 7 layre  
 7 cleare

*[Handwritten signature]*

Of



the second Booke.

¶ Of the ordering and care of the greater, or Garden Mallowes. Cap. xiiiij.

¶ **A**ND the, greater, or Garden Mallowes, whiche beareth floures from the sommer vnto winter, aswell of the white, as red, is like in beautie vnto the Rose, although not so strong of saour, and swæte of smell: whiche the women in our time vse to decke their houses and windowes with. And nowe thys Mallowes as Columalla writeth, ioyeth to be in a fat ground, and hauing moist dung lying aboute it, and that it be remoued when as soure leaues be well sprung vp. And this hearbe the Romanes in aurtient time vsed to eate in their salets and potage, in steade of other hearbes. And the floure also of thys hearbe (as writeth Columella) doeth both open at the full appearance of the Sunne, and shutteth againe at the setting of the Sunne. And to conclude, Palladius willethe the seeds of this hearbe, to be sowen in the Moneth of Februarie.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

Garden Mallowes is moyst, like to the other kindes of Mallows, and may very well be applyed, as well to the outwarde as inwarde griefs. And nowe the hearbe, roote, or seedes, eyther sodden in milke or wine, and drunke, do ceale a hete and dyre coughe, heale the lungs blistered, and is a singlar remedy against the Cisticke. And the Garden Mallows sodden cyther in wine or water, and mixed with Hony and Allum, and the same holden and gargelled for a little season in the mouth, doth both heale the blisyrings of the mouth and thyoate, and other stinking sores. And the Mallows sodden and eaten, dothe lose the belly: and the same also preuaileth in Agues, vnto such as be then bounde in the bodye. And of the same decodion maye be made a glistre to lose the belly. And the distilled water of the Roses or flours of the greater Mallows, doth (of experient) heale the breakings out of the mouth, and preuaileth againste al outward and inward heats, and healeth also the holy fire, and blisters of the thyoate, and all other swellings, if the same be gargelled in the mouth and thyoate, & otherwyle applyed wythout, by fyne linnen clothes di, pyed in the same. These hitherto of the properties of the greater Mallowes.

to use . 9  
inng bistered . 9  
+ sick . 9  
bifurmas of 3 month  
of thye & other chylde  
sore . 9  
lose the belly . 4  
agues . 9  
breakig out of month . 9  
inward & outward . 9  
hob 1 . 9  
blisters . 9

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes or the Fenell. Cap. xv.

¶ **A**ND first the Fenell (after the mind of later wyfters) ought to be sowen in the beginning of the Spring, which with vs

71 *Secrets in sowing and planting*

is counted in the end of Februarie, and that in Sunnie places, and somewhat stonie.

But after the minde of the auncient wytters, it maye be sowne in the moneths of December, Januarie, and Februarie: and at any time the same may be remoued. And nowe in cure time, the greene leaues of Fennell be Crawed vnder Cakes & breade set in the Duen, to giue a swæter taste and saour vnto the cruste. Also the greene leaues be stuffed in Sea fish, to take away their Sea saour and smell in the eating, which the daintie mouthes can scarcely beare withall.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

Fennel is hote and drie in the second degree, but Aegineta wyrteth, that the Fennell doth heate in the thirde degree, and dryeth, as if were in the first. Also the Seedes, the hearbe, the rinde, and the roote, be applyed in medicines. And nowe the seedes ought to be gathered in the beginning of September, and kepte for thre yeres: also seeth the hearbe of the fennell (and when you cannot get the hearbe) then vse the seedes, which boyle in faire running or Conduit water, after drinke of the same a good glasse full euery day, which so taketh away the vnnaturall heate, & causeth a cleare sight. And the whole roote of the Fennell may be plucked vp in the beginning of May, & kepte for thre yeres. Further, if any woulde put away the red spottes of the face, which do represent a kind of leaprie, then let him take the Fennel finely brused, and mixe the same with olde Barrows greace, & after beat them a little moze together, which so done, the annoint lightly the face with that ointment, whiche after doth make the face to be seemely againe, and taketh the spottes quite awaye. And the fennel eaten of women (doeth of p[ro]p[er]tie) increaseth the milke in their brestes. And the Seedes eaten, doe p[ro]uoke v[er]ine, and send downe the termes. And the seedes eaten, doe helpe the stopping and hardnesse bothe of the Liuer, & milke, and the Meading of the v[er]ine, & the iuyce of the Fennell mixed with warme milke, and the same giuen to drinke vnto yong Babes, and suckling children, helpeth the hardnesse of fetching the b[re]ast. And both the rinde, and roote of the Fennell sodden in wine, and drunke at the going to bed, and in the morning fasting, doeth helpe suche as be pained with the disease of the Stone, if the same sickness proceedeth of a hote cause: and the Fennell eaten doth comforte the stomacke, and helpeth digestion: and the like doth the pouder of the seede, e[it]her eaten or drunke. And the roote sodden so long vntill the same be soft, and layde hote on womens pappes, beginning to impellimate, doeth heale them withoute harme to the patient. And the iuyce pressed into a tinne porringer, & the same set for .xv. daies in the Sun, whiche dropped into the eyes,

50 - Sav  
of p[er]ico

of vnnaturall heat  
of a cleare sight  
of red spots in the face

of increaseth milke in  
womens brestes  
of termes  
of stopping  
of hardnesse of v[er]ine  
of hardnesse of fetching  
of b[re]ast  
of stone  
of digers h[er]b

womens pappes beginning  
to impellimate

eyes doth in short time after, cleare & amend the dimnesse of the sight: & a little of the Aloes Hepaticke put to this iuyce, & the same set in the Sun for .xv. daies, whiche after drop into the eyes, and it will greatly amend the sight. And about all other waies with the iuyce (for the sight) this especially is most commended, that the iuyce be boyled betwene two dishes on a chafing dish with coles, and that the water, which standeth (like a dewe) on the vpper dish be poured (as the same alwayes riseth) into a Glasse, & this doe so long vntill no more drops appeare in the vpper dish, & after droppe of that water into the eyes, & it wil greatly amend and cleare the eyes. And the iuyce of the Fennell tempered with honny, and dropped warme into the eares, doth sea the wormes increased & felt in them. And the roote with the licour sodden againe with wine, and that drunke, doth help such pained with the crainpe, & healeth the drop sic. And the iuyce of y<sup>e</sup> leaues mixed with vineger, and annoynted on burning swellings, doeth aswage them. These hitherto of the properties of Fennell.

*eye sight .g.*  
*wormes in the eares .g.*  
*drop .g.*  
*drop .g.*  
*burning swellings .g.*

¶ Of the ordering and care of the Annis. Cap. xvj.

And first the Annis doth desire a wel digged ground, & fat, and commeth very well vp (in other places) by dunging, & moisture; and it is sowne in the Months of Februarie, and March, by it selfe, and with other hearbs.

*feb*

¶ The Phisicke helps:

The Annis is hote & drie in the thirde degree, & hath the vertue of consuming and dissoluing, & the seeds also may be kept for foure yerres in much efficacy & strenght, if they be hangd vp: and washing your face in the distilled water of this hearb, it doth much cleare the same, so that this water be measurably vsed & with discretion, for that the often vsing of it, doth make the face yealow, and against the black & blew of a strep, & especially if the same be in the face, about y<sup>e</sup> eyes, let the seedes with the ruminie be brused together, and y<sup>e</sup> wroughte with Ware, apply hote to the greiued place, and to the increasing of milke in the breasts, & of Sperme, the powder of Annis either eaten or drunke, doth greatly helpe, and this onely is caused by opening y<sup>e</sup> passages of the milke and sperme. And in what manner the Annis seedes be vsed, they do aswage the swellings, which both harden the bowels & greiue the stomacke. And the eating of the seeds (any leaues together) doth both heate the Liuer, & helpeth digestion. And the Annis seedes sodden in wine, & mixed with Sinamon & Masticke, & that drunke, do mightily help the grieuous belchings proceeded of a cold stomacke. And the Annis seedes sodden in water, & drunke with the harts tong, do help the stopping both of the liuer & mylt. And y<sup>e</sup> same helpeth al kinds of the drop sic, & stayeth y<sup>e</sup> disease, called the Whites, in womē. And the powder of the Annis seedes sowne in a linnen bag, & boyled in wine, & after applyed hote vnto the womans priuie place, doeth bothe cleane hit bodye, and sendeth down the termes.

*face face .g.*  
*black & blew strep .g.*  
*milke in breasts .g.*  
*Sperme in reat .g.*  
*aswage swellings .g.*  
*hard the bowels .g.*  
*digest .g.*  
*belching .g.*  
*stop .g.*  
*drop .g.*  
*disease called Whites .g.*  
*terms .g.*

72 *Secrets in sowing and planting*

*g. swethy & marz  
& lavers.*  
*g. squince*  
*g. mappelmee  
stomach*  
*Conan*  
*Stoppes*

And the seedes taken with Castorie, doe helpe the swelling, bothe of the stomacke and bowells. And the Annis seedes brused into powder, and tempered with hony, Isole and vinegere, and boyled together, whiche after by gargelling of the same in the throate, doth helpe that disease called the Squince. And the same prepared with Wine and drunke, doe helpe the impostumes of the stomacke, and the coughes. And the Annis seedes either eaten or drunke with vineger and hony, do helpe the strangling or stop ping of the matrice. These hitherto of the properties of the Annis Seedes.

¶ Of the ordering and care of the Cummine. Cap. xvij.

*warre*  
*marz*  
*may*

¶ **A**nd firste the Cummine, delighteth to be sowed in a fatte and well dressed grounde, and vnder a warme ayre, and eyther in the Moneth of Marche, or in the middle of the Spring the seedes ought to be sowne. And they do beste prosper, being sown among other hearbes. And some auntient Authoures wyte, that seedes prosper the better, and growe the plentifuller, if they be sown with cursed wordes.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

*g. digests*  
*g. wind n' great*  
*stiff*  
*g. rough*  
*g. sweated cokes*  
*g. remme*  
*g. a blacke & blew*  
*stye*  
*g. greeninge grs.*

Cummine is hote and drie in the third degree, as Aegineta wyrteth, and the Seedes also may be kept for five yeares, and vled in meats, drinckes, and sauces, for that they comforte and helpe digestion. And the wine of the decoction of Cummine Seeds, the drie figges, and of fennell Seedes vled together, doe mittigate the paine and gripings of the great guttes, comming of windinesse. And the same wine also like ordered, doth pzeuayle against the cough comming of colde. And against the swelling of the cheekes, take the Cummine seedes, and figs, wet brused together, and after seeth them in Wine, whiche laye plaister-wise on the grieued place, and it doth helpe the same. And against the colde Reume of the head, take the powder of the Cummine Seedes, and Bay berries, whiche heate together in an earthen pot, and putting the same after into a little linnen bag, apply warme on the head, and this without doubt helpeth that grieue. And against the blacke and blew of a strepe, or in any other maner done, whiles the same is yet freshe and newe, you must take the fine powder of the Cummine seedes, and worke the same wyth Waxe at the fyre, and often applye that plaister warme, vnto the grieued place, whiche so vled, is thoughte a sure and perfecte remedye. And the Cummine Seedes, sodden in wine wyth fenegreke, doe take awaye swellings, and the griping paine of the guttes. And the Seedes brused and tempered

peered with the white of an egge, and that layde on the eye, doeth take away the rednesse of the same. And y Lummine seeds boyled in wine, and that layde hote on the Hauell, doth ease the Strangurie, and all other passyons of the bladder. And the Lummine seeds sodden in water (if the face be washed with the same) doe cause the face to be clearer and fairer, so that the same be nowe and then vsed, for the oft & muche vsing of it doth make the face pale. And the Lummine seeds brused & boyled wrth vineger, and that applyed warme to the Nostrills, doth stay tye muche bleeding at the nose, and womens excessive of the Reddes. These hitherto of the properties of the Lummine Seedes.

rednes of eyes  
strangury  
passyons of bladder  
face clearer  
purge bleeding  
at nose  
womens excessive  
redes.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the Coliander. Cap. xvij.

¶ Firste the Coliander is to be sowne in a fat ground (althoughe it will well ynough prosper) in a leane ground. And the seeds the elder they shall be (so that they be not vtterly decayed with age) the sooner and better they will prosper & come vp, and they desire also to be often watered. And Palladius writeth, that the seeds may be sowne from the middle of March to October.

Diff. seeds  
water

¶ The Phisicke helps.

The hearbe Coliander is sufficient common, and hath the vertue of cooling, as writeth Dioscorides, althoughe other write (as Vigonius) the Coliander is colde and drie, and others to be hote and drie. For by the effect it is knowne to be hote, in that it doth resolute windinesse, & weenes. And on the other side againe, the seeds shew it to be colde & drie, in that (after meate) eaten, they stay the vapours rising vp, that they ascende not vnto the heade. And nowe the seeds in receipts may well be vsed and kepte for two yeares. And the seeds haue the vertue of helping digestion, and the paynes of the stomache of windinesse, if the seeds be ministrd in meate. And the wine of the decoction of Coliander drunke, doth the like. Also the poulder of the seeds cast on meates, doe cause them digest the better. And Isidorus writeth, that the poulder of the seeds ministrd in sweete wine, do cause men the proner to the veneriall acte, yet the same too muche vsed is euill, for that it bringeth men vnto a frensinesse, & raging with themselves. And the muche eating of the hearbe and seeds together, is venomous to Dogges, and killeth them. And further, the confectes made of the Coliander Seedes with Sugar, do not onely strengthen the stomache by vsing them, but repress the vapours ascending to the heade, & there-

resolves weenes  
womens weenes  
stay vapors rising  
up after meate  
digestion  
venereal  
frensinesse  
kill doggs  
strengthen stomache

74 *Secrets in sowing and planting*

9 - *fallis subno*  
 11. *bleeding of nose*  
 12. *courses of women*  
 13. *harmeth head & blond*  
 14. *very fine*  
 15. *very sweet & thidre*  
 16. *hot in part*  
 17. *low thing in warm & blisters*

foze the rather to be vsed in meates of those whiche be moloined with the falling sicknesse. For the cause of this sicknesse, doeth proceede of the vapours whiche rise from the stomacke vnto the heade. And the Seedes may not bee eaten rawe, but rather sliced in vineger, or couered ouer with Sugar. For that the seedes either sliced in vineger, or couered with sugar, befoze the eating, do stay the humors rising fro the stomacke vnto the head. And the Coliander Seedes prepared with vineger, and brused, and after taken with the iurce of the Plantaine, stayeth the great bleeding of the nose. And Xenocrates wytteth a maruellous matter, if p same be true, that if a woman eate but one graine of the seeds, that then hir courses shal run for one day, if two graines, then two dayes together, if thre graines, then thre dayes together: thus looke howe manre graynes, and so manre dayes following they shall continue. But the herbe is forbidden to be taken inwarde, for that it harmeth the heade and blond. And the iurce of the Coliander mixed with vineger, doe bothe coole and helpe the holy frye. And the seedes a little brused and giuen in raisons to eate, doeth slea the wormes in children. And the iurce of the herbe, with the iurce of Lettuce, of Plantaine, the white of an egge, and Oyle of Roses, al these labour red wel together, and after laide on hote impostumes, and burking swelling, or blisters, doe bothe assuage and heale them. These hither are of the Coliander.

¶ Of the ordering and care of the Mustarde feedes. Cap. xix,

*It is sown*

**M**ustarde firste the Mustarde Seeds say to be sown in a tilled & well laboured grounde, and rather on the ridge of furrows, although they spring in any grounde, and be nourished in fine earth, like to poulder duste. And the seedes must be raked ouer, whereby they may be covered in the ground. For that they say in the naturall moisture continuing in the earth. And the seedes whiche you prepare to be eaten (in transposing the plants) they will so be stronger. Also the seedes sown befoze and after winter, do desire a fatte ground, and to be thine sown, for so they come by better than being thicke sown. And after the planted be well spring by, they may be reioined and set againe.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

*diffuse affricke external*

Mustard seedes be hote & drie, in the fourth degree, and the seedes only be kept for five yeares. And the seedes haue the vertue of dissolving, attracting, and extenuating. And againe the palle of the tongue

the seedes onely chewed and holden vnder the tong, do help the same. And against the palse of the other members, let the seedes be put into a little bag, and sodden in wine, layd on the grieued place: but especially in the beginning of the sicknesse. And the poulder of the seedes drawn by by the nose, doeth prouoke sneeing, and purgeth the braine of superfluities. Also Plinie writeth, that the seedes doe extenuate and diminish the clammy and grosse humours, and doe heale the stings of Serpents and Scorpions, being ministred wryth vineger. And the seedes do maruellously purge, breake the stone, cause an appetite, and comforte the stomacke. And the seedes bruscd with Enula Campana, and that layd on rypc impostumes, do both breake and drawe them without paine. And the seedes gargelled wryth water and honny, do helpe the blistring of the mouthe and the Squince. And the seedes eaten with figs and Luminine mixed together, do helpe the droopse. And a like quantitie of the Mustarde seedes, Pellitorie, and Ginger, these mixed together with rosed honny, washing the mouth therewryth and holding the same a good while in the mouth, do purge y<sup>e</sup> braine of such euil humours, whiche especially cause the grieuous aking and paine of the head. And the selfe same doth helpe the falling of the rooffe of the mouth, and the vicers in the throat. And to haue a cleare voice to sing, take the meale of the Mustard Seedes, and worke the same with honny into little balles, of the whiche swallow one downe euery morning, & it shall cause you to haue a cleare voice in short time. And the chawing of y<sup>e</sup> Mustard seedes in the mouth, doth drawe down and purge the Reume of the head. These hitherto of the Mustard seedes.

palley of y<sup>e</sup> gl<sup>o</sup>g. g  
 palley in other  
 members. g.  
 Sneeing. g  
 purge rlamy g  
 humors.  
 Sting of Scorpions. g  
 Stone. g  
 appetite. g  
 impostumes. g.  
 Squince. g  
 droopse. g.  
 purge of humors  
 falling rooffe of  
 mouthe. m y<sup>e</sup> throte.  
 a cleare voice.  
 purge fleume g

¶ Of the ordering and care, both of the Cheruill,  
 and Caper. Cap. xx.

And first the Cheruill desireth to be sowed in a fertile, moist, and well dinged ground. And to be sowe in the moneth of Auguste, for so it serueth verie well all the winter thoroowe. And the Capers ioy in a barren and leane ground, they flourish and beare their floure in the Sommer, and noy al other hearbs growing neare to them. And they also wyther and dye away, at the setting or going oute of sighte of the seauen starres.

august

¶ Of the orderiug, and care, of the hearbe Dill. Cap. xxj.

And first the herb Dill, desireth the common earth of the garden, and to be sowed in the moneth of februarye or March, and in the monethes also of September or October. And in

L. ij.

a gentle

# 76      Secrets in sowing and planting

18 m fow  
route

a gentle and holosome place, it may be sown in the moneth of December, eyther by it selfe, or among other hearbes, and wel beareth or suffereth all conditions of weather. But it moste ioyeth in the warme weather, and to be thin sown and watered, if they be not other wise beawed and moistned with shoures. And some couer not the Seedes with earth, after the sowing, supposing, that the birds will not eat by the seedes lying so bare.

## ¶ The Phisicke helpes.

9 - shankle pissy  
9 - milk in breasts  
9 - paine of matrice  
m - ill sight  
9 - slepe  
4 - poma of eares  
9 - Toy vomiting  
9 - wind of belly  
9 - deafe & indame  
9 - ill of priuities  
9 - strangury  
9 - matrice after birthe  
9 - termes  
9 - pilles of fundam  
ment healed

Dill is hote and drye in the second degree, and the seedes maye be hepte for thyeer yeares, although they be the better, if yearlye the seede be renewed. And the seedes also be chiefly occupied in medicine. And nowe the decoction of the hearbe and seedes, doth prouaile and helpe the straightnesse of pissyng, and increaseth milke in the breasts. And as gainste the paine of the matrice, take a handfull of Dill, boylng the same in Wyne, & after applying it in plaister soyme vnto the grieued place, whiche so, doeth helpe the same. But Avicen wyrteth, that the muche and often eating of Dill, doth weaken and make dummie & light, and yet if any vseth the hearbe, it procureth sleepe, and the rather if y head be annointed with the Oyle of Dill. And the auntient phisitions write, but espetiallre the learned Galen, that garlandes made of the greene hearbe, and woyn on the head, procure sleepe. And the iurec oyle of Dill, dropped warme into y eares, doth help the paine of them. And the Dill sodden with Poppy seedes, and that drunke, doeth stave vomiting. And the selte same, stayeth the grypings, and winde of the belly. And the ashes of the Dill, doth help all the diseases of the fundament and paine of the priuities, and it may profitably be annointed on mooste vices, and especially those (whiche Galen writeth,) to be offe in the priuities. And the decoction of y Dill in Wine, and that drunke, doeth helpe suche pained with the strangurye. And the Dill sodden with Sugar, and that mixed with Oyle and Wine, and after drunke, doth helpe the matrice, lende downe the after burden, and draw downe the termes, taking to the quantity of twoo drams at a time. And take of the Seedes of the Dill, and Nettles a like quantity, those beate into fine poulder, whiche mixe with water and honny, and after laye that plaister wise on the pilles of the fundament, and it will heale them in thye time. These hitherto of the herb Dill.

¶ OF



¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes, of the  
hearbe Rue. Cap. xxij.

And firste the Rue or herbe Grace desireth to be sowne in a  
sunnie place and drye, and in the month of march, and that  
the earth be myxt with ashes. And this herbe togeth to be sowē  
on high beddes, whereby the proper moysture maye shed there-  
fro, as Palladius writeth. And the bare seedes also without  
huskes, may be strewed on the beds, and covered ouer with fine  
drye earth with a rake. And the yong plants sprong out of the  
seedes, being in the huskes, be the stronger, although they be  
longer in the appearing aboue the earth. And the yong plantcs  
hate both moysture and dung, and rather loye in the dung of  
ashes, and may not well abide the colde of the winter, and there-  
fore desireth to be covered on the beds with ashes, whereby the  
same maye the better defende them from the sharpnesse of the  
colde, thzoughe the heate thereof. And if they be sprinckled with  
water, then do they faster spring vp, as writeth Theophrastus,  
yet may not the plantcs be moued with anye Iron, for feare of  
hindring their growth. And when the yong plants be somewhat  
come vp, then wæde them diligently, whereby the wædes hyn-  
der not their growth. And you may not only sowe the seedes, but  
set vp the slippes beyng slippyed off from the greter stalkes, nere  
to the rootcs, in the spring tyme, and in the moneth of August, &  
that the slippes be wythed at the ends, for so they speedily take  
roote in the earth. And the whole plant remoued, and set aga in,  
doth seldome prosper, but dieth after the newe setting, whiche  
the slippes, broken off from the great stalkes, contrary do. And  
they prosper many yeres, without wythering any thing, so that  
a woman (hauing then hir termes) come not nygh nor handle  
the herbe, for that by handling, the hearbe doth by little and lit-  
tle wyther away and drye, as wyrteth Columella. And some  
write, that the Rue set within the beane boared thzough and  
couered with earthe, doeth so in the growing take awaye the  
strong smell of the herbe.

first  
man  
ashes, dried  
ing/bd

water

178 104

178 104

hermes, ke  
ye new.

A. U.

And

78 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

And both Plinie & Palladius write, that the Rue more togeth  
and the plentifulter groweth, by being set vnder the shadow of  
the fig tree. And of this Theophrastus indgeth that to be y<sup>e</sup> best  
herbe Grace, which planted throughe the figge tree barcke is so  
couered with earth.

Dew of one  
blister

And the weeding also of this hearbe wyth bare handes  
whiles the dew yet hangeth on the leaues, doth cause daunge-  
rous blisters and soares.

Waller oyle  
to looke iure

And therfore if any by ignorance doth weed about these plats  
wout gloues on their bands, & that the handes be after infected  
both with an Itch & swelling, or blisters, then let the person an-  
noynt his hands with Sallet oyle, or for the lacke of oyle, with  
the iuyce of the Hemlocke, and it wil heale them in short time.

Drive away  
weasels  
gnats  
she

And the iuyce of the hearbe Grace, sprinckled on Hennes,  
Cockes, Chickins, or any other Poultrye sitting on the rowste,  
or sprinckled in the poutry house, doth driue away Weasels,  
by the great smell of the herbe, for it is a special defence against  
such kinde of vermine. And to driue away eyther gnats or flies  
out of your chamber, then take a greenebranche of the hearbe  
grace (as Democritus writeth,) & with y<sup>e</sup> same sprinckle water  
round about your chaber. These for y<sup>e</sup> ordering of y<sup>e</sup> herbe grace.

¶ The Phisick helpes.

g. poyson

g. wind  
g. r. m. r.  
g. poyson

Herbe grace is hot and dry in the third degree, and both the leaues,  
and seedes may well be vsed in medicine. And the seedes also oughte  
to be gathered in the harvest, which may wel be kepte for fiue yerres,  
and the leaues dyed, for all poysons, and a peculiar triacle of y<sup>e</sup> poze,  
which not only the king Mithridates witnesseth, but verye experience  
doth dayly teach the same: yea both curious painters, and fine gra-  
uers, do often eate of this herbe with their meate, for the clearing and  
amending of their sight. And the Rue eaten doth put away winde: and  
of this bulleth the desire vnto the veneriall act. And the leaues eaten  
with dry fygs and walnuts together, is the surest remedye that maye  
be, against any deadly poyson, if the same be taken in time. And ano-  
ther preseruatiue for the same, somewhat more costly, which is on this  
wise: take one ounce of the leaues of the Rue, halfe a ounce of figs,  
halfe an ounce of Juniper berries, two ounces of walnuts, and foure  
ounces of vineger, all these mixe and labour together, of the whyche  
swallowe downe a little fasting, and timely in the morning, and you  
shal

shall be defended that day from being poisoned: and it is also a ples-  
 crous tryacie agaynst a p[er]sistent ayre. And the herbe Grace sodden in  
 bynegger, and drunke, putteth away belching. And the herbe sodden in  
 wrne with fygs vnto the consumption of the halfe, and after drunke,  
 doth mightily helpe the dropsie, the pannes also of the bycasses, sydes,  
 and lornes: yea, the same drunke doth helpe the cough, the diseases of  
 y<sup>e</sup> Liuer, y<sup>e</sup> lungs, & the kydneys, so y<sup>e</sup> ther hang no ague on the patient.  
 And the herbe sodden wyth oyle, & after cast by in gylster forme, doth  
 put away the payne of y<sup>e</sup> womans places, & the swellings of the great  
 gut. And the herbe bzused with oyle, & that layd playster wise on all y<sup>e</sup>  
 priuie place vnto the fundamēt, doth help y<sup>e</sup> strangling of the priuity.  
 And the herbe sodden with Iop & annis in wine, doth put away gry-  
 pings, cyther drunke or somented on the grieued place. And a playster  
 made of y<sup>e</sup> herb with oyle, & layd on the nauil, doth slay the wormes of  
 y<sup>e</sup> belly. And the eating of the herbe grace, doth amend & put away y<sup>e</sup>  
 Rincke of y<sup>e</sup> onyons, & Carlike. And the herbe grace helpeth those dis-  
 eased with the ague, if the same be sodden in oyle oliue, and before  
 the fit come, the body be annoynted with y<sup>e</sup> same, or else the same put  
 (before the fit) in gylster wise. And the herbe sodden in oyle & dropped  
 hot into y<sup>e</sup> eares, doth expel the wormes. And y<sup>e</sup> herbe sodden in wine  
 with myrre, y<sup>e</sup> drunke, doth put away the water betwen y<sup>e</sup> skin & fleshe.  
 And the iurce of the Rue, mixed with y<sup>e</sup> orle of Roscs, and vineger,  
 & annoynting the head therwith, doth put away y<sup>e</sup> beating pain therof.  
 And y<sup>e</sup> herbe sodden in fumitorie water, & drunke, doth helpe childre  
 diseased with small pockes. If the children hauing the mesels, be not  
 alredy blinded with the, hang the about childrens necks, both y<sup>e</sup> roote  
 of the Rue, and Scabiousse, and they shall be defended thereby, by Gods  
 permission. And an ointment made of the herb with orle of Roscs, ce-  
 ruse, & vineger, doth heale any scab, y<sup>e</sup> holy fire, & running soares, and  
 hot blisters. And y<sup>e</sup> herbe with garlike, salt, & walnuts mixed together,  
 & laid plaister wise on the bit of a mad dog, or adder, doth heale y<sup>e</sup> same.  
 And agaynst the weaknesse of sight, proceeded of a cholericke fumo-  
 sity, drinke then of the wine wherin this herbe hath bene layd to soke  
 in the vessel, for a while before. Also the herbe mixed with rose water,  
 and y<sup>e</sup> layd on blearred eyes, do maruelously cleanse & heale them. And  
 agaynst the toothache, take the herbe sodden in wine, & lay y<sup>e</sup> plaister  
 wise on the grieued place. Or this wise, take the stalke of the same  
 herb, & burn the same somewhat in the fier, & with y<sup>e</sup> burne the hollow-  
 nesse within the tooth. And agaynst the coldnesse of the stomacke, and  
 pally of the other members, drinke the decoction of this herbe, with ca-  
 ropp. And agaynst the stopping of the liuer, the milt, the straightnesse of  
 making water, drinke the herb with the roote of the fennel sodden in  
 wine together, or the pouder of the roote of the fennel wyth the iurce  
 of the herbe. And agaynst the straightnesse also of making water, and  
 bloudy fluxe, sceth the herbe in wine and oyle, and y<sup>e</sup> lay plaister wise  
 on the roote of the priuities. And yong married wpues marc seldome  
 rate of this herbe, for feare of hindring conception at any tyne.

plagne. g.  
 bathing. g.  
 drop. g.  
 pannes of breath  
 sides & loynes  
 rough. g.  
 dis. of holer. g.  
 paine of wo. p. are.  
 swelling of y<sup>e</sup> g<sup>r</sup> gut.  
 stragling of y<sup>e</sup> priuities.  
 wormes of y<sup>e</sup> belly.  
 stink of onyons &  
 garlike. g.  
 ague. g.  
 wormes. g.  
 water betwene y<sup>e</sup>  
 sk & flesh. g.  
 head ache. g.  
 small pockes. g.  
 scab. g.  
 holy fire. g.  
 running sores. g.  
 hot blisters. g.  
 bit of a mad dog  
 or adder. g.  
 ill sight. g.  
 tooth ache. g.  
 cold stomack. g.  
 pally. g.  
 stopping liuer & milt.  
 straightnesse making water.  
 bloudy flux. g.  
 hindring  
 conception.

AND

80 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

9. *venomous* *bitte*  
*of worne* *beast.*  
4. *drives away*  
*venomous* *beast*  
*where it is* *sol.*

and the person annoynted with the iuyce of this hearbe, or beating the hearbe about him, shall not be bitten or stinged of any venemous worme or beast. And last, the Rue of proprietie, doth drive away all venemous beastes and wormes, out of that grounde, whiche is set about with that herbe, and of this the same is planted in gardes, nere to the beds of Sage, that the Toade should not sit vnder the sage, vnder whiche (as some write) they delight to be. These hytherto of the properties of the herbe grace.

¶ Of the ordering and care, of the hearbe  
Ilope. Cap xxiiij.

*cover up*  
*1/2* *dryd*  
*2* *in*  
*3* *shadow*

And firste the Ilope is a fruitfull plante, and necessarye in the Garden, which ought to be sowed, or sette in the slips and whole plants, neyther in a fat, nor dunged grounde, but in an open and sunnie place: and after the hearbe is well sprung vp, then maye it endure the frostes, and snowe in the winter. And Palladius willethe the Ilope to be set in the whole plantes, in the moneth of Februarie. And in the Sommer when the Hearbe beareth his floure, then cutte of the same and drye it in the shadow.

¶ The Phisicke helps.

*3.*

9. *yeat* *longs*  
*8.* *short* *breath.*  
*7.* *rough*  
*6.* *wormes* *with*  
*5.* *loose*  
*4.* *stiffnes*  
*3.* *swelling* *of*  
*2.* *milke*

The Ilope of qualrtyeis hote and drye in the seconde degree: but Galen affirmeth that Ilop is hote and drye in the thyrd degree, but the same is of the thynne partes. And when the same is to be vled in medicine, then ought the leaues to be stripped from the stalkes call as way as vnpofrtable, but the leaues may wel be kept for a yeare.

And nowe the Ilope sodden in spring water with sygs, honnye, and Rue, and after drunke, doeth helpe those diseased in the Lungs: fetching the breath short, an olde cough, proceeded through y distillings from the head vnto the lower partes, and in the fetching of breathe (none otherwise) then by reaching the necke vpright, and layeth all manner of wormes in the belly. And the iuyce of the hearbe drunke wyth Oximell, doth loose a costive bellye, and the same iuyce taken wyth the seedes of Treilles, doth gently loose the belly, and causeth a cleare face, and good coulour of the skinne, if any drinketh thereof. And the herbe boyled with pure duckes grease, and figs, and that layd in playster foryme on the milte, doth take awaye the swelling thereof. And against the hardnesse or swelling of the milte, and the water betwene the skinne, boyle the herbe with figges and salt Riter, and lay that

that plasterwise on the griued places. And the herb sodden in wine, and drunke, doth cleanse the bzeast. And the herbe sodden in water, doth swage the swelling of the gummes, by washing the mouth therewith. And the herbe sodden in wyne wyth Fenel seedes, that wine drunke, doth take away both the paine of the stomacke, and bowels: & a foment also made with y<sup>e</sup> herb sodden & applyed to y<sup>e</sup> stomack, doeth y<sup>e</sup> lyke effect. And y<sup>e</sup> same foment applyed beneath doth purge, & cleanse womē's places of the superfluous humours. And in the disease of y<sup>e</sup> Squincie, the herb sodden wyth figs, and that gargelled in the throte, doth greatly helpe. And the herbe sodden in vineger, with the which ewashe the gummes and teeth, and it wyll cease the ache and paine of them. And of the Flope made a wyne, named Flope wyne, whiche helpeth by drinking therof, the diseases of the bzeaste, the sides, and the Lungs the shortnesse of winde, and an olde cough. Also the same prouoketh vyne, and helpeth the gripings and nippings of the body, and ceaseleth the colde shaking of a darlyc ague, and draweth downe the termes. These hitherto of the properties of the Flope.

cleane breast  
 Swage swething  
 pain of stomack & bowels  
 cleanse womē's places  
 Squincie  
 10th ache & griping  
 stopping of  
 colde shaking of darlyc ague

¶ Of the ordering, and care, of the Mintes, Cap. xxiiiij.

Rub Brye

And first the Mintes maye be planted neare vnto a well, or other running water, for that the herb delighteth in a moist place, and to be set eyther in slippes, or in the whole rootes, and flouryseth in the Sommer, but wythzyeth in the Winter. And this hearbe oughte to be set in a Sunny place, but in no verve fatte grounde, nor dunged: and this hearbe may not be moued after the growing with no Iron, as we haue afore taught. And this herbe once sowne and prouing, doth continue many yeres after in the Garden. And Plinie wyrteth, that the Mintes oughte to be sette in the begynning of the moneth of March.

withen  
 w<sup>5</sup>  
 w  
 m<sup>ans</sup>  
 J

¶ The Plisick helpes.

R J

Mints in the Garden, is hote & dry in the second degree, and all sortes of the mints in the garden, do both comfort the stomacke and help digestion. And now the Mints brought to pouder, and eaten in mylke, doth sca the wormes in the body. And the herb eaten doth lose the belly, and the dayly vsing of this herbe doth giue a good colour. And at any time eaten, is verve healthfull to the body, and the iurce of the hearbe mixed with a little Hymlstone and vineger, and that annoynd on the hollye fire with a fetter, doeth cease the paine soothly with.

digestion  
 wormes  
 lose  
 a good colour  
 annoynd  
 fire

M.

And

Q

## 82 Secretes in sowing and planting

a. some of rudnes  
 b. bowels  
 c. rme impo  
 d. Struck by breath  
 e. over hundred  
 f. poison  
 g. stopp  
 h. milke & vnde  
 i. res  
 j. was mee in belly  
 k. wormes in eares  
 l. will not  
 m. generat  
 n.

And the Mintes sodden with wine and drunke, doth ease the paine of the hrdneys, and bowels. And sodden in wine and oyle, and that layd plasterwise on impostumes, doth dissolue and cure them. And against the sticking sauour of the mouth, and rottenesse of the gummes, and teeth, let then the mouth and gummes be washed with vineger of the decoction of the garden Mintes, and after rubbed wylh the pouder of dry Mintes, or wylh dry Mintes. And against the bzeak hart cured by the curdyng of the Mylke, take a great handfull of the Mintes, and the same seeth in wyne and orle, and after lay that plaster wylse on þ paps, and it helpeth them. and further note, that when any medicine is giuen agaynst the poyson, the same ought to be ministred wylh the iurce of Mintes or wylh wyne of the decoction of it, if you ca not get (at þ time) the iurce. And agarnst poyson also þ only iurce of þ Mintes or wine of the decoction of it, or the iurce of it wylh honnre com-mixed together, doth helpe the same. Also the same helpeth the stop-ping of the Liuer and mylke, and the ways of the vyne proceeding of a colde humoz, and of the h- te, wythout an ague. And the iurce mini-tered with honny, doth slea the woymes in the belly, and it doth also kil-woymes, dropped into the eares. And the Mintes put into Mylke, will not suffer the mylke to curde, although the ruen be put into it. And in the like sort, it doth hinder generation. These hylherto of the properties of garden Mintes.

### ¶ Of the Ordering, and care of the Garden Tyme. Cap. xxv.

i. pld  
 ii. some ground

And first the garden Tyme is a plant right profytable, wht- the delighteth rather to be set in the whole plants, then sown in the Seedes, in a leane and stony grounde, and that open in þ sunne, but neyther in fat nor dunged ground. And Theophrastus wyrteth, that it wyll well ynough prosper, if the plantes be set with the floures growing on them. And Palladius wyrteth, that the beste time for the setting of it, is in the latter ende of the Moneth of September, in a Sunnye place and Stonye ground.

### ¶ The Phisicke helpes.

g. vria  
 h. termes  
 i. purgation  
 j. shon wind

The Garden Tyme is hottc and drye in the thirde degtee, and of this it doth prouoke the vyne, and the termes in women, and purgeth also the bowels, by drinking thereof in wine. And the Tyme sodden wylh honny, and drunke, doth helpe such as fetch the winde thoste, and

and helpeth in a manner all other griefes of the breaſte, by ſpitting forth the cozrupte matter. And foure drammes of the fine powder of the Tyme, taken with fixe ſponefull of the Oximel, doeth both purge choller, & cleaſe the bladder.

algrig's of y<sup>e</sup> breaſt.  
purgeth choller & bladder.

And if the belly ſwelleth, then take on dramme of the fync powder of the Tyme, with a ſponefull of Hellicrate, whiche drunk faſtyng, do caſe the paine of the bowels & lornes. And to take away the winde of the breaſt, the ſides and flanks, drinke the quantity of thre dramms of the powder, with a ſponefull of Oximel mixed together. Also thre drammes of thys powder mixed wpyh a ſponefull of Oximel, doeth purge the melancholy humours, and dulneſſe of the ſenſes, proceeding of melacholy, and the ſame potion alſo giueth the clearneſſe of ſight, and helpeth the paines of the eyes, if it be taken faſting. Also p powder helpeth ſuch. grieuouſly pained with the gout, being gyuen with wine. And this tyme muſt be moderately bled, for the muche eating of it doth greatly heate. And yet beware of the blacke Tyme, for that p ſame doth cozrupt, and engendereth choller: but uſe that only which beare a purple ſoure, hauing ſome whitneſſe withal. Thus much of the Garden Tyme.

paine of bowels & lornes.  
wind in the breaſt & flanks

melancholy humours  
dulneſſe of ſenſes  
eye ſight.

gout.  
heat.  
gout, choller.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecretes of the herbe Organe, Cap. xxvj.

And firſte the Organy delighteth to be ſet in rough and ſtoony places, and to be dunged and watered, vntil the ſame be wel faſtned in the earth. And it alſo delighteth in thelike order of dreſſing as doth the Parcely.

ſtony

And Palladius willethe the Organy to be ſet in the moneth of September, about the tyme of the entryng of the ſunne into the ſigne of Libra. And it oughte then to be gathered, when the ſame beareth ſoures, and to be dzyed in the ſhadowe, for ſo the leaues and ſoures wyll continue for a yeare, if they befoze bee ſtripped from the ſtalkes, and the ſtalkes caſte away.

ſeptebr

in ſhadowe dzyed

¶ The Phiſick helpes.

Organe of the Garden is hotte and drye in the thyrde degre: and the kyndes of Organy, haue the vertue of cutting aſunder, dzying, drawing, and conſuming: yet the roote of anye of them hath no vertue in medicinc.

cutt aſunder  
dries  
drawes  
conſumes  
diſolues

And now the Organy helpeth that perſon diſeaſed in the liuer, by dzyinking the decoction of the ſoures.

℞.ij.

And

g. pome & head  
 g. chris in me  
 g. ease bowels  
 g. urine  
 g. pome in making  
 water  
 g. drop of  
 y urine  
 g. binding  
 g. ferme  
 g. redd leapy

And the flowers and leaves put into a little linné bag, and the same boyled in wine, apply hot to the heade, the patient then couered with clothes to sweate, and this doth so dryue forth, and put away manye grieles of y head & best, & helpeth also y straightnes of fetchyng breath. And the Diggany sodden in wine, and drunke, doth hely the stomack, and ease the bowels. And the same decoction layde on the belly, doth prouoke vyne. And thys decoction drunke warme, doth ease the grieuous payne in making of water, and the dropping of the vyne. And to helpe the discale (of going often to the scoole and doynge nothing) take y powder of the Diggany, and strew or sprinckle that on the fundament, & it will shortly after, loose y belly, & moue the ordure forth.

And the herbe it selfe sodden in wine and oyle olyue, and the same stryked on a linnen cloth, & applying after to the womans priuy place, doth so take away y hardnesse therof, & purgeth it & draweth down y tearmes. And to heale a redde leapye, take the iurce of the Diggany, the iurce of the Dozehounde, a little wine, and the like of the Oyle of Benbane, yet more of them than of the iurce, putting to them also a little Oyle of Tartar, which so done, mixe altogether, annooynting him selfe in the hote house before hys commyng forth, & if that after hys commyng forth he shal be grieued wyth pain, then let him take Goats grease melted in a fryng pan, wyth the which annoint the places agayn, & after lye down in a clean paire of sheetes, lying there so long vntil the same be dyed in, and after take & bruse the Diggany, mixing the same with wheaten bran, & heate that in a fryng pan, and this being so hot as may be suffered, lay on the blisters & leapye, & binding a cloth vpon it, let it so lye vntil the same neede heating again, & this do so ofte, vntil y pacient be heales, which y same wil do without doubt.

And in the meane whyles let the patient eate such things whiche do ingender good bloud, and be of an easie digestion, or that easily digest: and daily to drinke the syrupe of fumeterie: and if the same happen in the wynter, then to drinke y syrupe of Egrimonie in such sort. And further, the iurce of Diggany with womans milke dropped warme into the eares, doth ease the paine of them. And the herbe brused with Roscs, Calanus Aromaticus, and worne wood, and this applyed hot, doth send vp agayne the fundament into the proper place. These hit herto of the properties of the Diggany.

ease y paine of eares  
 g. p. medicament

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the Violets. Cap. xxvij.

And first the Violets (after the minde of Columella) oughte to be planted in beds a fote high, and the earth well labourred and turned in with dung, and that the plants be not aboue a yere old, and to be set in short furrowes a fote byode, in the beginning of the spring, or in the entraunce of the Moneth of March. And the seedes may be sowne in beddes two tymes of y yere, and firste in the spring time, and after in the harueste,

but

spring  
 haruest



but the later sowing prospereth the worse with vs, through the colde season following And the Violets oughte in the like sorte to be weeded, and the olde withered leaues cut away, and watered (when neede so requireth) as you doe the other potheerbes, in the comming by. And to haue one plante of the Violets, to bring forth sundrie colours together, take y<sup>e</sup> leaues of al y<sup>e</sup> colors of Violets; and putte them togyther into a thin woyme linnen cloth, and after set them into a well dunged & laboured ground, as befoze was taught. And this of an often epperience, hath been founde true, that vnieste the fairest Violet be reioined, it wil bear both a smaller floure, and a lesser of smell, than it did in the yeare befoze.

*rut of dead*

*re meon y qca*

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

Violets be colde in the ende of the second degree, and the Violets ought especially to be gathered in the moneth of Marche, and dried in a Madowie place of the ayre. And there be also three kindes of the, whiche be vled in medicine, as the white, the blache, and the yealowe. And nowe the floures drunk, do take away the windinesse of the stomacke. And the decoction of the floures, gargelled in the throate, doe helpe that disease named the Squincie. And the iurce of the hearbe doeth putte away any swelling proceeding of a hote cause. And two drammes of the poulder of the seedes drunk in wine, do draw downe the termes of women. And the roote sodden in wine, and laide on the swollen milke, do put away swelling, and dyeth by the humour. And the roote sodden in wine, and laide plaisterwise on the hote goute, doth ease the paine. And the white Violets boyled, and laide in plaister forme vnto the belly of the woman, do send forth the dead rongling, and put away the swellings of the priue place. And if a soment of them be applyed to the nether part bywarde, do mundifie the priue place, and drawe downe the termes. And the Violets applyed, do cease the paines of the head (proceeding of an vntemperate hotenesse) cause sleepe, soften and make ease the breast and throate, helpe the pallat of the mouth fallen, and the Squincie. But the syzup of the Violets, do especiallye worke these aboue saide. And the only smell of the floures, do take away the headache. And the rootes boyled with Vineger and drunk, & the same annointed on the Splene, doeth asswage the swelling, and (easeth likewise) the Goute. And the hearbe with the roote boyled and applyed to children, doth helpe their cough.

*windem stomacke .g*  
*synnyre .g*  
*swellings .g*  
*termes .g*  
*swollen milke .g*  
*gout .g*  
*dead rongling .g*  
*swellings .g*  
*headache .g*  
*steepe .g*  
*pallat .g*

And the oile of y<sup>e</sup> Violets, doth heale many diseases, as first dropped into the eares, doeth put away the griefs of them, & taketh away the headache by annoynting the heade therewith. And the same Dilc mixed

*headache .g*  
*swelling .g*  
*gout .g*  
*cough of children .g*  
*panic .g*  
*headache .g*

D.ij. mixed

q. worme  
 g. burning of a  
 agne  
 q. white  
 role a mes  
 q. qe  
 gnathie staller  
 u. he. p. inflammatio  
 q. r. ease thirs  
 a. put away the jaundice

myxed with worm-seedes, and annointing the belly therewith, doeth  
 expell and sende forth the wormes. And the syrup againe of the Vi-  
 lets, doth helpe the burning of the ague, loose the bellye, and qualifi-  
 eth a hote Luer. And the purple violets dzunk in water, doe loose  
 the belly, qualifie chollet, help inflammations, cease thirst, and put away  
 the Jaundise, and the same doth the conserve of violets. These be  
 therto of the Violet.

¶ Of the ordering, care and secretes of all the  
 Roscs. Cap. xxviii.

slips  
 sawt roe  
 lowly

**A**ND for that the Roscs be pleasant ornaments in a Gardē,  
 and so necessarie (all the kinds) in medicine, therefore wee  
 minde here largely to write both of the sowing and setting of  
 all the kinds. And now all the kindes of Roscs may not be sette,  
 eyther in fatte or clayie grounde, nor moiste or wette earth, but  
 in a fine earth, and dunged with scoze of drie rubbish, & to be set  
 in short slippes, (of a foote long) and in very short furrowes. And  
 to be sowen in the sedes, they come slowly vp.

seeds ripe  
 when grapes  
 ripe

And here note, that you may not thinke those to be the seeds  
 of the Rose, which growe in the middle of the floure, in colour  
 like unto golde, but that the seeds be in that part, whiche resem-  
 bleth the forme of a small pearc, in the vpper ende of the stalke,  
 on whiche the leaues of the floure sticke. And nowe the Seedes  
 are then ripe to be gathered, when as the grapes (with vs) be  
 full ripe, whiche ripenesse of them is well known, both by their  
 fulkish and brownish colour, & by their softnesse in the feeling.  
 And further the beds of the Roscs, must be highe raise vp, and  
 euerye pearc pruned and cutte aslope in the tops, whiche you  
 ought especially to doe in the moneth of Marche, hauing youre  
 ground thē in a readinesse, and the day faire. And ordering your  
 beds after this manner ycarely, they wil continue many years:  
 And when they ware slde, then digge vp the earth about them,  
 and prune them in like sorte as befoze is taught, as by cutting  
 from them all the withered stalkes, and deade bzaunches, and  
 repayring the emptie places with newe slippes, after the mind  
 of Palladius. And some wit, that the olde plants with their roots  
 be digged vp, cutte a span long, to be new set againe. And other  
 will.

not a slip  
 in tops  
 made

new set

will the yong springs with their rootes, to be set againe a foote vnder, and to be dunged and often watered. And if you haue not sufficient plantes, to set out youre beds, then betwene the olde plants, sette yong springs, slipped off from the olde, and the olde set againe with the rootes and all, and that a foote asunder, eche from the other, well dunged and often watered, for so they growe the plentifuller and faster.

And at the end of euery yeare, newe sette them againe, and prune or cut away y<sup>e</sup> superfluous branches, at the setting of eche roote, and digge also freshe earth often aboute them, for in that they ioye. And the Koses wil smell the sweeter, if they be gathered in sayze and drie daies. And to haue your Koses sooner than any other, and pleasanter of smell, make little gutters two hand bredth from the rootes, and poure warme water morning and euening, into the gutters, whiche so throughe the heate doeth greatly comfozte the plants, and maketh them growe the faster.

*war water in gutters. make fresh roses after they be budded.*

Also Didimus writeth, that if you set Garlike heades here & there among your Koses, they will smell farre pleasaunter, throughe the continuall heate sent from them. And here note, that the maner of the watering abouesaid ought not to be done befoze y<sup>e</sup> cups, or very yong buds appeare, & then (daily after) to water vnto the gathering.

*garlike here make fresh roses*

And to haue besides Koses euerye Moneth, you muste then (as Didimus writeth) newe plant, dung and water them often euerye moueth. But to haue Koses monthly, cannot be possible, neyther in oure Countrey of Englande, nor in any other countrey, lying vnder the North, so well as in the temperate and warme Countries. And this note, that those Koses which grow in a drie ground, be far sweeter than those growing in a wette grounde.

And to haue timely Koses, sift the your earth throughe a sieue, and that earth mire with dung, and put the same into an earthe pot, whyche after moisten a little, setting the same abzoade in sunny and warme daies, or letting small and fine raine fall vpon it, and at the setting of the Sunne, take in the pot allwaies:

and

88 *Secrets in sowing and planting*

and this so long doe (and watering it the whiles) untill the Winter and colde weather be paste.

And after this, when a fayre day commeth, then set the pot into the earth, conering it ouer and about the plants with fresh earth, and doe afterwarde, as aboue is taught, and you shall so haue timely roses. and to keepe Roses al the yeare, then as Didimus teacheth, take the greene Barly, being yet as graffe, (and not eared) with the rates, and all those put into an earthen pot not glased, or rather vnealed, into which, put your buddes nothing opened, and diligently couer them about with this greene Barley, and you shall keepe them freshe and greene so long as you list (couering the mouth of the pot close) euen as though they grewe still in beddes on their stalkes. And others strawe the greene Barley on the pavement or harde floore, and in the blades they bury or hide the buddes. Also other take the young buddes a little opened, at the setting of the Sun, and in no wise touching them with handes, but properly gather them with a sharpe knife, and those lay on a drie board, letting them be a houre all the night throughe, if the night be faire, after haue in a readinesse your newe earthen pot well glased bothe within & without, but some thinke it the better (if not nealed at all) but whether way lyke you best, that vse.

And after this I saye, put in your Roses befoze the Sunne be vp in the morning, and stop close your pot with claye, mixed with horse dung and Rokes, that no ayre breathe out at the mouth of the pot, whiche so done, then sette the pottle into a bed of sande, and couering it well ouer with the same drie sande; letting no moyste place be neare to, or about the same. And on this wise, and by that other meanes alsoe taught, you maye haue freshe Roses al the yeare throughe.

And here note, that Roses and other flowers, dyed either in the Sunne or Sun, do longer and better retaine their strength, fauour, and colour, than being dyed in the shadowe. so that the same be done with discreiton. And the like may be thoughte to be done, with the sweete and smelling Roses.

And as touching that waye of making the white Roses to be red,

red, and the red Roses to be white, and so partie coloures, with other preatie conclusions besides of the Rose, you shal further reade and vnderstande in my little treatise, entituled, Natural and Artificiall conclusions, where I largely write of these, and many other right pleasant conclusions, to be read and vnder-

book of natural conclusions

The Phisicke helpes:

The Rose is colde and drye in the seconde degree and nowe when the red/Roses be not fully opened, then they must be clipped off, and dyed in the Sunne. And the Rosed honny eaten, doth profite much, for that the same doth both comforte the bloude and stomacke. And the iuyce of the Roses sodden in wine, doth take away the payne of the heade, and helpeth the eyes. And the gummes washed with the same, doth put away the paine of them. And the leaues of the Roses bzused and laide on inflamations, both draw forth the heate. And the seedes of the Roses beaten to powder, doeth cease the paine of the teeth by rubbing the gummes and teeth with the same powder. And the heads, (in whyrche the seedes be) sodden and drunke, do loose the belly, and helpe the spitting of blood. And the Roses mixed with honny & sugar, and that eaten, do drie by the euil humors of the stomack. And the leaues of the Roses sodden in wine, and giuen to drinke, doth help such greis as commonly happen in womens priue places. And the freshe oz new Rose leaues, mixed together with honny, doe aptly purge mans body. And to make an especiall laxatiue, take two ounces of the iuyce of the Roses, & mixe the same with the whey made of cows milke, and a little Spickharde. And you maye also take the whey of milke, putting thereto twelue ounces of the Rose leaues, & a little honny, and this doth maruellous well loose and purge the belly. And syrup of Roses onely (being made of freshe Roses) doth loose and purge the belly. And the Rose leaues wyrought together with honny and sugar, do both comforte and purge the body. And that vineger is right profitable, in whiche the Roses be infused oz steeped for a nighte, to unnoint oz strike on hote members, oz places of the bodye. And to a hore stomacke the same appl. ed outward, doth gently help, and quakfieth the hote burning therein. And the iuyce of the Roses, drunke with sweete Conduite water, doth bothe loose the body, purgeth the bloude, and especially chollet, and putteth away the Kinges euill. And the iuyce of Roses onely taken, doth put away a greate burning without daunger, and bringeth a man (after the purging of his body) vnto a quiet rest. And the Roses to comforte the hearte, and recoyce the bloud. And the rosed honny doe both comforte and expell the melancholy and Reumaticke matter, and giuen in that water in which fennell seedes is sodden, doth purge the better, if the same shall be mixed with a little saie. And the beste making of the Drie of Roses is on this wise, first clip off the Rose leaues from the whites,

comfort bloud & stomack  
some of head  
help eyes  
some of gums  
role of inflamation  
loose  
help spitting of blood  
drie of stomack  
purge & body  
a good laxative

roles heat  
purgeth bloud  
chollet  
kinges euill  
rest  
melancholy

oile of Roses maketh

A. and

boyling the same in oyle Oliue, then sun the same in a glasse for 60 daies, & this is the best approued oyle. And now this oyle applyed to a hote Liver, doth greatly help. And this oyle annoynted about the temples, doth take away the aking or beating paines of the head, & cooleth it. And the Rose leaues bled in meates, doth asswage bothe the heate of the stomacke & liver. And the powder of the Rose leaues brused with vineger, & mixed with the white of an egge, doth effectuously healz the paine of the eyes, restraineth the humors, & the sheeding of blood into the vaines of the eyes, if the same be applyed plaisterwise on the temples. And the same called sugar Roser, hath the vertue of coforting & staying, & helpeth the bloody fluxe, the choleric vomiting, the faintnesse of body, & the Cardiacke passion. And the dew fallen on Rose leaues, & gathered into a cleane quill, whiche drop on the neather eye lid, & it will amend the blearnesse of the eyes. And the drie rose leaues boyled in wine & drunk, doth amend the paines of the heade, the eyes, the eares & the gums: & the same caske in guster forme, doth helpe the corrutions both of the bowels, & womens priuie place. And the red rose water drawn in Balneo Mariz hath manue goodly effects. And first y<sup>e</sup> same water drunke, doth strengthen & coole the braine, y<sup>e</sup> hart, the stomacke, & al the inner members, strengthen y<sup>e</sup> spirits & naturall heate, & preseruech from rottenesse. Also take one ounce of this water, white wine a little quantitie, of Turia one dram, to which ad of Aloes Hepatike, & of sugar Candie, of ech. xx. granes, these mixe al together, whiche after drop as neede requirerh into the eyes, for it doth cleanse, drie, and strengthen the sight and the eyes. And the same water droped with a little sugar into the eyes, doerh helpe the cruleration, and rednesse of the eyes, proceeding of heate. And drunke fasting vnto the quantitie of thre ounces, doth comforte the heade: and mixed with wine, and then drunke vnto the quantitie of sixe ounces, doth take away the giddinesse of the heade, and strengtheneth the liver. These hitherto of the properties of the Roses.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the hearbe Basill. Cap. xxix.

As first y<sup>e</sup> Basill for his excellent smell and sauo<sup>r</sup>, hath bin greatly counted vpon in ancient times insomuch that kings, and princes, for the great delight which they conceued in the herbe, did plant the same in their Gardens. And now the time of sowing this hearbe, after the maner of Columella, oughte to be done, in the beginning of the Moneth of May, in fatte earth, & when the seedes be sowed and covered with earth, then to be pressed down w<sup>th</sup> a roller, or diligently trode down with y<sup>e</sup> foote. For if the Gardener shal leaue the seedes vntrodden down,

a. a. h. u. liver. g.  
 a. eie paine  
 b. Conid. thol.  
 a. v. lowy. hie.  
 d. r. d. v. v.  
 d. m. i. g.  
 u. f. u. m. i. e. i.  
 g. C. a. r. d. i. a. c. k. e. p. a. s. s. i. o. n.  
 b. l. e. a. r. n. e. s. s. e. o. f. e. y. e. s.  
 p. a. i. n. e. o. f. t. h. e. e. y. e. s.  
 g. r. e. l. e. a. t. i. o. n. i. g.  
 r. e. p. b. r. o. m. e.  
 g. p. r. e. s. e. r. v. e. s. f. r. o. y. e. s. t. r. e. n. a. s.  
 g. r. e. p. e. t. n. a. t. u. r. a. l. h. e. a. t. e.  
 g. e. i. a. n. g. h. e.  
 e. f. o. r. h. e. a. d.  
 u. a. i. d. e. n. e. s. s. e. o. f. h. e. a. d.  
 g. s. t. r. e. n. g. t. h. e. l. i. v. e. r.

g. d.  
 g. d.  
 g. d.

that

that they did so ly hollow in the earth, that then the seeds wold  
 putrisie, & come to no pzoofe. And Theophrastus writeth a mer-  
 uellous matter of the Basill, that if the seedes be sowen with  
 cursed words, like as men commonly do in the sowing of Hēy-  
 sēde, that then they wil come vp the better, and the soner. And  
 the soner also the seedes bzeake & come vp, if after the sowing,  
 they be daily sprinckled with warme water. And some will the  
 seedes to be sprinckled with vineger, if towarde the winter the  
 seedes be sowen, for that with the sprinckling then of it, they so-  
 ner spring vp. And Plinie willethe the Basill to be watered one-  
 ly at none time of the daye, whereas all other hearbes be wa-  
 tered mozing and euening with colde water. And when the  
 Basill is come vp an handfull highe, then to be cut off so righte  
 oz straight as is possible, althoughe it be sozbidden in the like  
 sozte, to touche it with yron, as the hearbe Grace, Hints, and  
 Sauerie. And Gargilus Martialis writeth a meruclous mat-  
 ter, & woorthy to be noted, that the Basill sometimes bringeth  
 forth purple floures, sometimes white, and sometimes redde of  
 colour, like to the Rose. And Crisippus once grieuousslye bla-  
 med that Basill, as writeth Plinie, affirming the hearbe to bee  
 vnprofitable vnto the stomacke, the vaine, the clearenesse of the  
 eles, besides to cause frensineste, the forgetfull sleepinesse, and  
 stoppings, oz cozrptions of the Liuer, and for this he thought  
 it best to be eschewed both of men & goats. And the Greeke wri-  
 ters thinke the Basill so disagreeing & contrarie to women, that  
 if the whole Basill with the rote be put secretly vnder the dishe  
 of meate set on the table (the woman not knowing therof) that  
 she shal not after taste of the meate, so long as the hearb there  
 lyeth. And Diodorus writeth, that the muche eating of Basill  
 doth engender the abundaunce of lire.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

For the temperament and qualittie of the Basill authors do not ac-  
 cree, for Aescen writeth, it is hote and drie in the second degree, hu-  
 Galen and Regnier writte, that the Basill is heating in the seconde de-  
 gree.

cur words

war

no time

cut of

flower

in pzoofe

under a  
diss woman

here

gree, and that it hath a certaine excrement moisture; for the which cause it is thought dangerous to receiue inwarde, but outwarde to be annointed, it doth put away and digest. And nowe the smelling into the Basill, doth comfort the braine, and ret the smell of it doth greatly harme a weakke braine. And the seedes ought to be gathered in the moneth of July, for then they be beste. and the leaues sodden & drunk, doth take away the swimming of the heade. And the herbe doth the hearbe preuaile, if it be steeped for a night in wine, and after drunk. And the hearbe sodden in wine, doth cause it to be pleasaunt of smell, and heateth a colde stomache, and helpeth digestion. and the poulder of the hearbe drunk with the iurce of Sloes for eight daies together, doth helpe an out ward rupture. and the decoction of thys hearbe in water, and that the same be applyed like a foment aboute the priuie place, doth both cleanse the matrice, and drawe downe the termes. And the iurce of Basill drunk of women in trauaile of child, doth not onely moue forward the birth, but cleareth them after byrth. And the hearbe sodden in wine and oyle, and applyed to the fundament, doth cease the often desire vnto the stoole. And the hearbe boiled in raine water, and drunk with a little poulder of the iurce of Sloes, doth helpe the fixe of the belly, proceeding of colde. and the seedes drawne by by the nosethilles, prauoke sneking, and the seedes also mixed with Schoomakers blacke, doth take awaye wartes, and maketh the rise by the roots. and the seedes drunk, do soften the belly, and put away winde. And the seedes drunk in wine, do put awaye al melanchoir sadnesse, sicke byppe the minde, cause boldenesse vnto fearefull, and make merry the sad. And the Basill helpeth the stomache, for that digesteth harde meates, and profitable it is both to the Luer and heart. and the hearbe brused, and mixed with Barley meale and vinger, and that laide in plaster forme, doth helpe the inflammations of the Lungs. And the saour of the Basill doth helpe stopping of the braine & nose, purgeth the head, and healeth yreume. and the iurce of the Basill dropped into the eyes, doth cleanse the mystes of the eyes, and running of them, and the hearbe eaten worketh the like. These hitherto of the properties of the Basill.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the sweete Maiorame. Cap. xliij.

**A**ND first the Maiorame for the pleasant smell, is an herbe muche esteemed of all persons, and maye either be sowne in the seedes, or set in the slips. And layeth also to be set in olde dung, the earth before well digged vpp, and to be rather set in moist and shadowie places, for so it groweth the fuller & big, but set in an opene sunnie place, the rootes be the shorter & crisped. And it may either be sown or set in spring tyme, & remoued into beds wel dressed w<sup>th</sup> drie dug, for it prospereth y<sup>et</sup> better.

¶ The



¶ The Phisick helpe:

Maiorame is hote and drye in the second degree, and ought to bee gathered in the sommer when it flourith, and after dried in a shadowy place, for so it will serue for a yere. And now the Maiorame sodden in lic, and the heade washed with the same, doeth cease the grieuous paine of the heade. And the Maiorame comforteth the braine, openeth the stopping of the members, and taketh away the disease called Apoplexia. And the pouder of the Maiorame giuen with meate or drunke in wine, doth heate the coldnesse of the stomacke, and comforteth digestion. And the drie leaues brought to pouder, and annoynted with honny, do take away the blacke and blew spots of the skinne. And the oyle of Maiorame doth heate so well the inner members, as the outwarde, and the ioyntes and sinewes. And the oyle also doth heale womens places, and applyed warme, doeth helpe all griefes, comforteth the braine, and all the members of the body. Also this herb hath the proprietie of heating all the inner members, softneth the wylte, & allwageth the swelling thereof. And the decoction of the herb drunke, doth helpe the water beginning betwene the skinne, the straightnesse of making water, and the gripings of the bodye. And the flowers and herbe layde in a fyne bag, and that applyed to the stomacke, doth take away the payne and gricfe thereof. And the pouder of the Maiorame drawne by in the nose, do both cleanse and heate the heade, and maye serue to all persons for the like cause. And the vapour of the decoction of the herb, receiued beneath, doth cleanse the matrice, and the herb made in a pessary, and applyed by, doth draw downe the termes, and the herbe with waxe, applyed in plaster forme on loose members, doth strengthen them, allwageth swellings, and other griefes. And the pouder of the Maiorame with a litte Cyngur, drawn by in the nose, doeth prouoke trisings, and stayeth tume. These hitherto of the properties of the Maiorame.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the  
Mangolde, Cap. xxvj.

And first the Marigolde is a floure very well knowne, and to be found in the most gardes at this day, whych renueth euery moneth, & is to be founde as well in winter as sommer. And of this named (of y<sup>e</sup> Italiás) the monethly floure or floure of euery moneth. And this floure also of certayne, is named y<sup>e</sup> husbandmans Dpall, for that the same so aptlye declareth the hoours of moorning and enening, by the opening and shutting.

head ake  
apoplexia  
old stomack  
ioynts firm  
oyle  
milt  
water milt  
stomack pain  
purg  
to  
y<sup>e</sup> common

94 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

of it. Also named the sunnes floure, for that after the rising of the sunne vnto noone, this floure openeth larger and larger, but after the noone time, vnto the setting of the sun, the floure closeth and shutteth moze & moze so that after the setting of the sun, the floure is then wholly shutte vp together. And now the seedes be commonly sowne in a well laboured and dressed ground, and in the increase of the Moone, for so they prosper the better. And to haue them grewe bigge, and to beare thicke and brode floures, you ought then to remoue and set the yong plantes often, and this alwayes in the increase of the Moone, and that you also put many seedes into one hoale together, and to water them in the springing vp. And if in the remouing you set them thinne, they prosper the better.

*fat from  
the  
be  
remoued of*

¶ The Phisick helpes.

The floures are to be steeped in vineger and salt, for so they maye be kepte for two yeres. And nowe the floures drunke in wyne, do comfort the stomacke, procure an appetite to meate, conuaine the humours of the stomacke, and heate a colde stomacke. And the rinde of the roote sodden in wine and drunke, doth both digest the euill humours, and helpeth the diseases of the Liuer.

*q stomach*

And the powder of the rinde of the roote mixed with the iurce of fenel, a little wine, and a litle ople, and boyled togyther vnto a thickenesse, and a little waxe after put to the same, making therof an oyntment, with the which annoynt on the milke, or colde stomacke, and it doth mightily helpe. And the iurce of the leaues dropped into the eares, doth sea the wormes.

*the  
worse*

And the rindes brought to powder, and layde on euill Burses, doeth heale them. And the iurce of the herbe and roote put in glister soyme, doth helpe the pallsie members. And to women hauing the breasts swollen, through the stay of monthly courses; let the floures of the Marigolde, the Spikenarde, and wine be ministered, whiche both doeth swage the swelling, and prouoke the termes, as wyrteth Mathews Siluaticus. And against the pissing of bleude, take the floures of the Marigolde, and after the boyling drinke the same, and it will staye it in short time. And the water distilled of the floures, doth heale all griefes of the eyes, whether the same be caused of heate or of colde, & cleareth the eyes, besydes it putteth awaye all griefes of the heade. These hitherto, of the properties of the Marigolde.

*justice  
the  
the*

Of

¶ Of the ordering, and care, of the Lauender. Cap. xxxj.

And firste the Lauender is an herbe swæte smelling, and at this day growing in most gardēns, of the which be two kin- des, the one growing high, & sēding forth a great souer, which for that it giueth no lesse sauour than the Spike, is of the same named Spikenarde. And the other, both in the largenesse of the leafe, and sauour is lesser. And for that the same is occupied in bathes, and in the washing of hands, for the swætnesse of smel, therefoze of mooste men named the lauender. Also the first named the Male, and the other the Female, as sundrye authours write. And nowe the Lauender ioyeth to be set in an open and sunnye place, and the earth stony, for it prospereth the better.

male  
female.  
open  
stony cart

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

Lauender, hath the vertue of heating and drying, but profiteth not vnto the digestion of meate. And nowe if anpe applyeth the Lauender often to the nose in smelling therto, it doth both comfort and cleare þe syght. And if any boyleth the Lauender in wáter, and that a shirt wet in the same, and after dyed againe (he woꝛne) will suffer no ibuse after to abide in the shirt, so long as the shirt kepeth the smell. And the floures haue singular vertues, especially to the helping of þe Apoplexi. Also the floures steeped in wine and after distilled, and of the same holden in the mouth, doth recouer the speechlesse proceeding of the Apoplexi, and hath many other vertues beside. For the same helpeth all the cold grieues of the braine, crampe, and gripings of the bodye, proceeding of cold. It helpeth also the stopping of the milt, heateth þe belly, and sendeth downe the termes, And the herbe with the floures dried ought to be distilled in June, whych drunk, vnto the quantitie of two ounces doth helpe the giddinesse of the heade: and the lyke if þe water be rubbed all ouer the heade, and so let drye in of it selfe. And the same water in lyke quantitie vled doeth helpe the Crampe, the Apoplexi, the astonishing, and trembling of the members and handes. Also this water helpeth the palle members, if they be often annointed & rubbed with it. And it helpeth the heauinesse in the mouing of þe tong by drinking thre ounces at a time. Also it helpeth þe vlcers, & paynes of the teeth, if þe same be often holden in the mouth: and the same water helpeth the blistering of the mouth, if the mouth be washed with it. These hither of the properties of the Lauender

erice g.  
care g.  
apoplexie  
Spotts left g.  
vap. g.  
hermes g.  
in an ordie  
marks

Of

¶ Of the Ordering, and care of the Spikenarde. Cap. xxv.

And first the Spikenarde groweth like vnto the Lauender, knowing that the leaues be thicker and bigger, and beareth also a longer stalk, and bigger flowers, whiche be of purple colour, like vnto the Lauender, and hath besides greater vertues. And now the Spikenarde ioyneth to be sette in a fatte earthe, well laboured and dyessed, and in an open and sunny place of the garden.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

The Spikenarde is hote in the first degree, and drye in the second, and causeth vaine. and if of the decoction of it, be a playster made, and the same layd vnto the pziue place, it stayeth the superfluous course of the termes, and taketh away the humours of womens places. And the Spikenarde drunke with colde water puts away the weaknesse, and trembling of the hearte. And the Spikenarde infused in lyc, and the heade washed therewith, doth cause the haire to growe: and helpeth the sheading of the haire. And the oyle of the Spike, wel drawn by glasse, is maruelous sweete, and hath many vertues, and especially vnto the palsie members, if they be annoynted therewith. And the sayde oyle dooth ease the Goute, and all other grieues of the ioyntes.

Also the oyle doth helpe the swellings of the stomacke, the diseases of the Liuer, the kydneyes and the kings euill, And the decoction of the Spikenarde, helpeth against the palsie of the tong, comforteth the sinowes, and dryeth vp the moisture, occupying the instrument of the tong. And the flowers of the Spikenarde infused in wine, and set in the sunne for a certayne space, in a narrow mouth glasse wel stopped, and after distilled by glasse (in Balneo Marie) with a softe fyre, and if the freshe flowers maye be had, then neede you not to refuse them in wine. And now this hearbe is very precious, and helpeth al cold grieues as wel within, as without the body. Also the grieues of the head or brain if a linnen cloth dipped in the same be applyed to the nose. And the same water helpeth the tume, and distilling of the head. And this water drunke, vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time, doth help the Collicke passion, proceeded of colde. And it ceaseth the paynes and giddines of the head, proceeding of a cold cause, if the noule of the head, and forehead, be annoynted therewith. And this water helpeth the cold, and palsie member, heating them and putting away the making of them. These hitherto, of the proprietie of the Spikenarde.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the white  
Lillie. Cap. xxxiiij.

As first the white Lillie, for the beautie & smel, is affirmed  
of Plinie to be next to the Rose, and higher of growth than  
the moste floures of the Garden. And the increas of this Lillie  
is marvellous, in that one roote sendeth forth and yelveth (for  
moze part) fiftie heades. And Palladius willeth the Lillie to be  
planted in y<sup>e</sup> moneths of October, Nouember and March, & that  
in a fat and well dressed earth, and the heades set a spanne, or a  
fote asunder, like as is taught hereafter in the setting of Gar-  
like. And to make them to beare purple floures, gather (as Pli-  
nie teacheth) to the number of .x. or .xij. stalkes, in the moneth of  
July, or when they floure, whiche binde together, and hang in  
the smoke, and after that slip of the leaues, making the stalkes  
naked, which steepe in the red wine lyes, in y<sup>e</sup> moneth of March  
(so long) vntill the knots of the stalkes haue sufficiently drunke  
in and appeare well coloured as a purple, and then set y<sup>e</sup> stalkes  
into the earth, hauing the wine lyes hanging both on the stalkes  
and rootes, and those after shall sende forth and beare purple  
floures. And Florentinus writeth, y<sup>e</sup> the floures of y<sup>e</sup> Lillies wil  
shew red, if that betwixen the rinde & the smal heades growing  
about the roote, you poure of the fine powder of the Vermillion,  
or else the powder of the red leade, in regarding that you harme  
not the smal heades growing about. And likewise drying them  
of any other coloure, euen of the same coloure will the floures  
growe: as if you liste to haue cyther græne, or blewe Lillies.  
And to haue Lillies all the yeare, take the buds not opened,  
with some of the stalke, those put into a newe earthen potte,  
not glased, and after stoppe close the mouthe of the potte,  
and when you shall neede of them, then sette those on the  
syde of a Bason in the Sunne, and after they haue felte  
a while the warmth, then wll they open and spreade as  
broad.

And Anatosius writeth, that you may haue Lillies at diuers  
times

¶

¶

50 heads  
or 100

fat  
spanne

purple

all y<sup>e</sup> year

98 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

12  
8  
9

times of the yeare, if that in the proper time of the yeare, you set of youre heades twelue fingers deepe, other eighte fingers deepe, and other but foure fingers, and thus in the growing vp, will they beare their floures at sundrie times one after the other. And on this wise, may many other floures be caused to growe, and beare at diuers diuers times.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

*l. lily*  
*in y...  
of the  
wounde*

The white Lillie is hote and drye of qualitie, but the floures be of a temperate qualitie. And nowe the oyle of the Lillies doe greatlye profite, by annoynting on the belly, for that it heateth womens places, and softneth the humors there hardened. And the roote sodden, & laide on hot impostumes, doth ripen them. And the roote roasted in hot embers, and brused, and after mixed with Rose water, and the same laide on the holy fire, doth heale the same, if it be daily vsed. And in the like softe laide on wounds, doeth increaseth the fleshe on them. And the roote sodden and brused, and mixed with Barrows grease, or oyle Myric, and after laid on impostumes, doth mightily soften them, and of the Lillie is made a good ointment, on this wise, take of the white Lillie rootes, of the rootes of Brakeurline, of the Marthe mallowe rootes, of eche, the fourth part of a pounce, these bruse together very well in four measures of wine, and after seeth all in halfe a pinte of oyle, vnto a thicknesse, which straine throughe a linnen cloth, puttynge therto a little waxe, and make therof an ointment, and annoynt it on the hard milke on the left side, and it will greatlye help, for that it doth not onely soften the same, but putteth away the paines thereof. And the roote of the Lillie sodden, and after boyled with oile of Roses, and annoynted, doeth heale burnings. And the roote sodden in wine, and the same drunke in the euening at the going to bed, doeth purge downewarde all noisome humors of the body. And the leaues sodden in vineger, and laid plaisterwise, do heale woundes. And the roote roasted, and mixed with honny, and that laide plaisterwise, doth heale loose and cutte synewes. These hitherto of the properties of the Lillie.

*milke*  
*burnings*

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the wood Lillie. Cap. xxxv.

*spring*

**A**ffirste the woodde Lillie, or Lillie of the valley, is a floure marvellous sweet, flourishing especially in the Spring time,

time, and growing properly in wooddes, and chiefly in valleis, and on the sides of hilles. But nowe for the greate commoditie, & vse known (of the floure) the same of late yeares is brought and planted in the Garden. And this hearbe springeth up with two leaues together, in fashion like the white Lilly, and in the middle both a slender and small stalk springe uppe, in the top of which, grow forth little smal floures, in a maner white, and of a pleasaunte smell. And the roote of it, is white within the earth, but wrinckled without. And this Lillie also loveth to be set in a moiste ground and shadowie place of your Garden, for so it prospereth the better. And the commodities of this floure, is alwaies had in the spring time.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

The woodde Lillie, is colde and moiste in the second degree: and the floures bee of greater effect: than the hearbe, and the roote passeth the floures in vertue. And nowe the floures drunke in newe wine, do strengthen the harte, the braine, the liver, and all the spirituall members (as they doe name them) and of this the same is aptly ministred, vnto the panting of the harte, giddinesse of the head, the falling sicknesse, the apoplexi and frenesie. And this wine doeth helpe those whiche bee payned with a trembling of the heart, and prickings aboute the harte, and the members whiche shake and tremble: and it doeth also stoppe the passages of the leprolie beginning, that the same spreade no further abroade. Also it doth put away the scabbe and ring worme, annoynted vpon: and the sooner, if you walke them sundry tymes, with the water. Also it asswageth the swellings of the stings of Bees, Wasps, and such like, by striking or annoynting the water vpon them. And the water of the distilled wine, doth purte away the inflammation and myste of the eyes, by vsing the same. And some distill this water for the aboue saide diseases, on this wyle. First they take the floures, and laying them to steepe for a moneth in newe wine, and taking them quite from the wine, they after distill ouer syue tymes in a Limbecke or bodye of glasse, whiche wine so distilled, is more precious than golde. For if any drin- keth of this water, with sixe graines of pepper, & a little of the Lauender water, he neede not after feare the apoplexi in that moneth. And Otho Brunfelsius teacheth the making of this wine, on this wyle: first take a gallon glasse filled with the best old wine, into which put a pound of the floures, setting the same in the sun for 40. daies: after distill it in a Limbecke of glasse twice ouer, into which put a little Lauender water & pepper, but other take of the old wine, putting into the same a

D.ij.

pounds

mo: 12.  
5 Sadm.

Spirit of  
ma  
from  
ban

of  
the  
the

distilled  
apoplexi

100 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

*eye revived  
colic  
memory  
ready witte  
poyson  
madde dogge  
the hart  
the senses  
strangurie  
pricking  
the liver*

pounde of the flowers, and after forty dayes standing in the Sunne, distill the same, into whiche they put of the flowers of Lavender, and Rosemarie, and other good spices, distilling it ouer againe, and then kepe it as a moste p[re]cious water, well stopped in a narrow mouthed glasse. And a sponefull of this water giuen to the patient at the point of death, doth reuiue him and prolong his life vntil his natural tyme appointed. And it doth comfort the braine, helpeth the Apoplexi, easeth the Collicke passion, and helpeth the impostume hapning in the hinder parte of the braine. Also thys distilled water giveth a good memory and ready witte, by annoynting the hinder parte, or naule of the heade, and forehead therewith. And the water of the flowers oulve distilled in the middle of the spring, and drunke vnto the quantitie of sixe ounces at a time, doth helpe those which be poysoned. And y<sup>e</sup> same water helpeth the bvt of a madde dogge, the byrth of chyldre, comforteth the braine, the hart, and the senses, and also putteth awaye the falling sicknesse if the same be drunke for forty dayes together. And the same water, drunke, helpeth the strangurie, the pricking about the hearte, and inflammation of the liuer. And the water drunke, doth stay the excesse of the moneth courses. These hitherto of the properties of the wood Lillie.

¶ Of the ordering, and care of the Floure-deluce. Cap. xxxvj.

And firste the Flouredeluce, is a floure well knowen to all persons, bearing leaues, both bigger, flatter, and larger, than that called the Sedge. And now the roote and hearbe needeth no other diligence of setting, than to be planted in a drye earth, wel laboured and dyessed, about the beginning of March. And the rootes growe into toyntes, solyde, and verye swete smelling: whiche some plucke vpp, about the beginning of the spring, and cutting them into round slices, they after stich them through with a needle, and hang them vp to drye, in the shadow.

And those rootes also be best commended, whiche be verye short, verye harde, somewhat red, swete smelling, byting in the taste, and whiche in the beating of it in a moztar, causeth the person to sleepe.

The



¶ The <sup>re</sup> <sup>ke</sup> helps.

The roote of the Flouredeluce, is onely vsed in medicine, and is hote and drye of qualitie in the seconde degree. And it is also verpe profitable against p cough, in extenuating those humours of the bzeall whiche hardly are spit forth. And it purgeth the grosse Rheumaticke, and chollerike humours, by taking sixe drammes of the roote, with water and honny, and the same drunke, prouoketh sleepe, slayeth the teares, and ceaseth the griefs of the body. And drunke with vineger, doth help the diseases of the milt, the cramp, the colde shaking which come before the fyr of the ague, and helpeth also the Weading of the Sperme. And drunke in wine, prouoketh monethly courses. And the decoction thereof applyed to the womans priuic part, doth soften the hardnesse thereof, & likewise open the stopping thereof. And mixed with Turpentine, & so annointing, doth ease the griefs of the loixes, and hips: and the pouder onely drawne vp into the nose, prouoketh sneeing, and ciensteth the hcade. And by chawing the roote in the mouth, doth so amed the stincking bzeath: and the same taketh away the strong sauour coming from the armeholes. And the greene or fresh roote boyled, and the same laid plaister-wise, doth soften wens, and other harde impostumes.

And the pouder of the drye roote, mixed with honny, and the same thicke laide on vlcers, doth cienze them. And the same applyed plaisterwise, doth draw out the bones in wounds, and doth couer againe the bare fleshe. And the pouder of the roote applyed plaisterwise to p forehead, doth greatly helpe the paine and griefe of the hcade. And the pouder of the roote, mixed with the pouder of the white Roseworthe and two partes of honny, the same annointed, doth take away the pimples of the face, and al spots caused by the sunne. And against the dropic, take a newe laide egge, pouring out the white, and to the yolke put in so muche of the iuyce of the roote, as was of the white, after set the same egge a while in the hote embers, which sufficiently warme, suppe off fasting in the mozning, and the patient shall after send forth a maruellous abundaunce of water betweenc the skin and the siege, and this often experienced. These hitherto of the properties of the Flouredeluce.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Pionic. Cap. xxxvij.

¶ And firste the Pionic is an hearbe at this day wel known, of the which be two kinds, the Male, and the Female. It groweth

D. ij.

groweth

groweth after this manner, <sup>with</sup> with the leaues hard, from the neather parte, and in colour like <sup>to</sup> the Horchounde, and the rootes cleauing together like to the rootes of the Violets, and Reddishe in colour, bearing big and purple floures, and resembling the foyme of the redde Rose, hauing within the floure a pealowishe seede like to the Rose, of whiche come the coddcs, in fashion like to Almonds, and growe together, hauing within red seedes, to the bignesse of the smaller peas. And the stalke also on which the seedes grow, beareth big and reddish floures, which of some, is named the Blessed Rose. And now the seede is named the Blessed Rose. And the seedes soy to be sown in a well dressed earth, and to be wadded about, at the coming by of the plantes.

#### ¶ The Phisicke helpes.

The roote of the Dionie heateth and drieth in the second degree, & endureth for tenne yeares in his efficacy, and hath also the vertue of comforting and cherishing the body, and causeth besides vaine, & purgeth the liuer and kidneis. Also the roote boyled in wine & drunke, doth purge the bloud. And the roote of the Diony is aptly ministered to women in childbed, being not thoroughlye purged after the birth of childe, for that the same causeth the coming down of the termes, & purgeth them so without harme. And the quantitie of an almond, of y<sup>e</sup> roote, is to be ministered at one time. Also the roote boyled in wine & drunke, doth helpe the gripings of the belly, and theading of the gal. And helpeth the paines of the kidneys and bladder, if the same bee with anye stopping of the vaine, and a smoake made of the little fine bzaunches of the roote, and receiued into the nose, doeth put awaye the kings euill. And the Diony roote doth take awaye blacke spottes of the body. And the roote hanged about the necke, doth put awaye the falling sickness, as by a late practise was tryed, that whiles a childe had this roote hanging aboute the necke, the childe so long was not grieued with the disease, but when the same was taken from hys necke, then was hee vexed in like sort, as before. And thus did the male Diony roote, but the seedes do not the like. And of this also may the male be known from the female. And the female Diony roote boyled in wine and drunke, doth aptly purge women after the birth of childe, and the same doth the seedes of it. And in other matters the rootes of bothe haue in a manner the like properties. And y<sup>e</sup> fresh roote of the Dionie, as Menardus writeth, worne about the neck, doth put awaye the vapors rising vpre to the braine, and strengthneth the braine, but the male doth this, which beareth leaues like to the Walnut,

Walnut, hauing a white roote of a fynger highnesse, and a span long. And certaine will that the roote be digged vpp in the wane of the Moone, the then being vnder the earth. And the seeds of the Piony doe helpe in causes especially in the termes of women, wherche sende them downe, and the dead ronyng. Also the seedes drunke in wine, doth helpe the harde deliery of childe. And the seedes of the Piony brused with Setwale, Galingale, and Sugar, of eche a like waight, y<sup>e</sup> same pouder taken morning and euening, doth put away porson, and gently looseth the belly. And tenne or twelue Seedes of the Pionie, drunke in olde wine, do stay the superfluous courses of women. And 15. seedes drunke (of the blacke) in either water and honny, or wine, doe helpe the night mare, the stranglyng of the secretes, and paines of the matrice. And the pouder of the seedes of Piony ministred in meate and drynk to children, doth send forth the stone begynnyng in them. And the pouder of y<sup>e</sup> roote of Piony (ministred in wine) in whiche the roote it selfe and Bugworze shall be boyled, doth helpe the falling sicknesse. And the same pouder boyled in castorie and drunke, helpe the palse. These hitherto of the properties of the Piony.

¶ Of the ordering and care of the white Poppie. Cap. xxxviij.

AND first the white Poppie must be sown in hote and dry places, like as you doe other potheearbes. It is thoughte, that this hearbe doth the better come vp there, whereas twigs or rodde, and shrubbes of trees be bzent. But the Poppy and Dill, haue the like conditions and order of sowing, whiche the Charuill hathe. And Palladius willethe the Poppie to be sown in September, in hote and drie places, among the pot hearbs. And yet in temperate and colde places in the monethes of Januarie, Februarie, March, and Nouember, either alone or with other hearbs.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

Poppie is colde and drie in the firste degree, yet as touching the Kindes, the white Poppie is colde and moyste, and the blacke, colde and drie, whych doth more mortife. And the seeds of the white gathered in the Sommer, when they be ripe, may wel be kept soz. v. yeres, whych haue the vertue of prouoking or causing sleepe, & of assuaging. And now to prouoke sleepe, make a plaister of the white Poppy seedes brused, and mixed wyth the white of an egge and womans mylke, wherche

whiche apply hote to the foreheade, and on the temples. And the women of Salerne giue to their chyldren the pouder of the white Poppy, with milke, to cause them to sleepe. And the seedes of the white Poppye, or the hearbe it selfe brused, and mixed with the oyle of Roscs, and thys laid plaisterwise on vlcers proceeded of a bruse, doth draw out the great heate. And the same applied to a hote luer, doth much helpe. And the pouder of the white Poppye seedes, mixed with oyle of Plumme, and annoynting the ridge of the backe wyth it, doeth take away the ache of the ioynts, and strengthneth them. And the iuyce of the white Poppye mixed with the oyle of Roscs, and annoynting the seete therewith, doth put away the paine and ache of the hote goute. And the seedes of the white Poppye beaten to pouder, and mixed with the oyle of Violets, and annoynting the backe bone therewith, doeth helpe both the burning of the ague, and heats of the Luer. These hitherto of the properties of the white Poppye.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the  
floure Petilius. Cap. xxxix.

And first, the floure named Petilius, whiche of y Frenchmen, is named, the little Indian eie, muste be sown in the mids of summer, that in the ende of Haruest it maye ware to a tree, and bring forth floures vnto winter. It is also sown in the sodes, and set in slippes, but the slips alwaies die, throughe the Harpe colde in the Winter time (howe soeuer they be tended,) and yet they refuse no ground. But they prosper better in a fatte grounde, and shote vp a mightie heighth, so that they appeare bushie, and spreade into manye branches, like to a mightie tree, or greate stalke, resembling nearest vnto the swete Byar tree.

¶ Of the ordering, and care of the Veluet Floure,  
or Floure Armour. Cap. xl.

And firste this floure, (in a manner) neuer decayeth, but keepeth still his colour, and the floure also is eared, much like to an eare of corne, very purple of colour, and beautifull to beholde, yet the same hath neither smell, nor taste. And it properly groweth vppen in the month of Auguste, and endureth vnto Haruest.

Haruest. And when all other floures be withered & dead, and it also in a manner withered, then after the moystening w<sup>th</sup> water, it doth recouer againe, and serueth to make Winter Garlandes. And of this it is sowne in many places in pottes of earth, that growing from Auguste, it maye flourish vnto October, in whyche tyme bearyng the floure, to be gently and tenderly gathered. And the floures so gathered, to be putte into an Duen (after the drawing of bzeade) and there gently bryed, after whych the maydens of Fraunce and other Countries doe lay them charily vpp<sup>e</sup>, and keepe them vnto Winter tyme, to make Garlandes of them, and to hang them about the house. And nowe of thys floure is here sufficiently w<sup>ritten</sup>, which althoughe it be not to be counted vppon, among the smellyng floures, yet for the beautie thereof, wort<sup>h</sup>ye to bee sowne in Gardens.

¶ The Phisick helpes.

*Pu*

The hearbe named floure Armour, is of qualitie cold and drie in the thirde degree. And of this the floure of it boyled in wine and hony, and drunke, doeth helpe the perillous fluxe of bloude, & the continuall paine of the often scouring of the belly, and staret<sup>h</sup> also the abundaunce of redde in women, and the white fluxes of the belly. Also the same helpeth the spitting vpp<sup>e</sup> of bloude, especiallye when any vessel or part in the lungs or breast shall be broken. And the herb sodden, and layde plaisterwise on bryled members, doth putte away clotted blood, and healeth the places speedily. And the floures boyled in wine and drunke, doth help the bite of venomous wormes, the Sciaticke, the distilling of the vaine, and a rupture. And the powder of this hearbe vnto the quantitie of three halfe pence in waight, drunke in white wine, doth stay the reweine distilling from the heade. And the hearbe sodden in wine, and the fundamente fomented therewith, doeth stay and take awaye the fluxe, the piles, and in the same manner applyed, doeth helpe the often desire vnto the scoole. And the roote holden in the mouth, doth cease the paine of the teeth. And the rootes bryled and mixed with May butter, and of that made an ointment, whiche annointed on inflammations, doth allwage them, and the hearbe doth keepe cloths and garments from being harmed by wormes, and moathes. These hitherto of the properties of the purple Heluer floure.

*the same  
redde  
with honey  
potes  
the same  
distilling  
rupture  
the same  
piles  
the same  
piles*

P.

Of



¶ Of the ordering, care, and secrets of  
the Gilyfloure. Cap. xli.

¶ And firste the Gilyfloure for his swætenesse and beautie,  
is named of the Frenchmen, the little eye, and of the Ita-  
lians Garyophilon, for that it giueth a swæte smell and sa-  
uour, like to the spice named Cloues. And nowe the seedes of  
the Gilyfloure be seldome sowne, but at the beginning of the  
Spring, and Haruest, you may breake off slips from the roote,  
and sette them againe, being wythed at the ende, in a halfe  
tubbe or potte, the earth therein made fat with rotten dung,  
and when the frostes oppresse and nippe them in the Winter  
time, they may then be remoued and set vnder some couert, in  
places safe from the bitter colde. And in faire dayes when as  
the Sunne shineth warme, then sette the potte or halfe tubbe  
abroad, that the plants may so be comforted with the warme-  
nesse of the ayre. And you may sometimes suffer the plants to  
be moistned a little with a gentle raine. And after those plan-  
tes sette in the beddes, doe spreade in the Sommer into small  
bzaunches, then do the Gardners slip them off from the grea-  
ter stalkes, about the fæte of them, before the cuppes at the  
toppes (where the floures appeare) be sprung out. And after  
this manner, you may dresse and sette out a whole bedde with  
a few plants if you wil. And there be some which take Cloues  
and bruse them, lapping them aboute the stalkes, neare to  
the rootes, and some make holes thozoughe with a bodkin,  
that the floures after sprung vpper maye sauoure of them.  
And there be others which write, that by the often remouing  
and setting of the plante, the floures spreade the broader and  
pleasauter to the eye. And Cardanus writeth, that you maye  
haue Gilyfloures (in a manner) vnto Halowentide, if scra-  
ping of the vpper rinde of the plantes, you so set them againe  
with the rootes in horsedung, which so causeth them to beare  
fayre floures in the Winter; so that you keepe them from the  
colde ayre.

And

And certaine newe practitioners write, that you may make one stalk to bring forth floures of many coloures, if you take the seedes of euery coloure of the Gillyfloure, and putte them al together into a thinne small reede or Tordill of a sheepe or goate, or else tyed vpp in a thinne worne linnen cloth, setting the same in the earth well mixed with dung: whiche after the watering will cause the plante to come vpp, bearing the like number of coloures in one stalk, as there were seeds sowed. And there be some which write, that if you myxe the Basill seedes with the Gillyfloure seedes, and vse them (as aboue saide) that they will spring together on one stalk. And the leaues of the floures, putte into a glasse of Vineger, and sette in the Sunne for certaine dayes, doe make a pleasaunt Vineger.

Of the ordering and care of the Strawberies. Cap. xliij.

And first the Strawberie is accompted among those herbes which growe in the fieldes of the owne accorde. And yberries be much eaten at all mens tables in the Sommer, for the pleasauntnesse of them, whiche for a moze delighte in eating, they dresse with wine and Suger. And as touching the rehearsall of the forme of this hearb, needeth not, seeing the same is well knowen vnto all persons. And nowe it aptly groweth in shadowie places, and rather groweth vnder the shadowe of other hearbes, than by growing alone. And yet the plants set in Gardens, will growe vnto the bignesse of the Mulberrie, if the earth before in the beddes be well dressed and trimmed, & diligently tended of the Gardner. But the herbe of it self continueth not aboue a yeare.

The Phisicke helpes.

The Berries be cold and moyll in the thid degree, and the like is the hearb. And Vigorius writeth that the Strawberie leaues be of a cold qualitie, so that the iurce of the, with the wine of the Pomegranats, & a little Rosewater mixed together, & applied, do helpe hot impostumes in the beginning, & in the increase of them. And y Straw

P. ii.

berrie

~~Strawberie~~

berrie leaues vsed in a bath, do greatly helpe the stone. And to helpe  
 the mightie paines of the hips, take three or foure handfull of the  
 Strawberrie leaues, scething them in water, and after bathing the  
 from the neather parte vprarde: whiche so done, then annoynt the  
 griued place with this oyntment following. Take of the ointment  
 of marthe Mallowes one ounce, of hony halfe an ounce, of waxe a  
 dramme waight, al these togither, making thereof an ointment. And  
 this doeth not onely helpe the ache of the hippes, but softneth the  
 matter hardned in them, and prouoketh vnc. And the Berries be  
 profitable to men, in that they take awaye the vnnatural heate, and  
 doe especially profite the chollericke persons, so that they coole and  
 moisten them. Also take of the iurce of the berries, and of plantaine  
 water, of eche eight ounces; of Rosed hony two ounces, of the iurce  
 of the Mulberries one ounce, of Albigræci and of Balaukia, of eche a  
 dramme, al these mixe togither, washing the mouth therewyth, whi-  
 che so helpeth the impostumes of the throate. And this hearbe eaten  
 with meate, doth helpe suche diseased in the mytte: and the lyke  
 doth the iurce of the hearbe drunke. And the same iurce giuen  
 with the white Pepper, doth helpe the Morthe winded. And the ber-  
 ries also doe stave thirste, profite the stomacke, and especiallye the  
 chollericke. And the decoction of the rootes drunke, doeth qualifie  
 the Liuer, being taken morning and euening. And the like doth the  
 decoction of the hearbe and roote togither, qualifie the heate of the  
 Liuer, and clenseth the reyns and bladder. And the besse distilling  
 of the berries is when they be ripe, but not ouer soft: and those whi-  
 che growe in the hillie wooddes be the better. And nowe the distil-  
 led water drunke, or mixt with somewhat and so drunke, doth qua-  
 lifie the vnnatural heate, and stave thirste. And the same water  
 drunke morning and euening, vnto the quantitie of foure ounces  
 at a tyme, doeth helpe the leapzie, and purgeth the bloude, by drin-  
 king of it in wine, or otherwise eaten with breade, and clenseth the  
 soule scabbe of the bodye. And in the same maner drunke, doth help  
 the liuer, the Kings euil, loseth the breast, comforyeth the heart, pur-  
 geth the bloude, and preuaileth againste the stone of the lornes, kid-  
 neys, and bladder. Also it helpeth vlcers of the throate, the grieuous  
 swellings of the same, and the sincke of the mouth, if anye gargell  
 the same in the mouth or throate. And drunke of women, doth clense  
 them, and send down theyr termes. Also it healeth al filthy corrup-  
 tions of the legges, if they be washed morning and euening with the  
 same, or with linnen cloths wette and applyed. And it cureth filthy  
 wounds, if they shal be washed in the same water, or vsing to drinke  
 of the water. Also it putteth away the swelling of the face, if þ face  
 be sundrie times washed therewyth. and mixed with salt, and distil-  
 led ouer againe, it doth both coole & cleare the eyes. These hither-  
 to of the properties of the Strawberries.



¶ Of the ordering and care of the Borage and Buglosse. Cap. xliij.

And first the Borage is sown in the moneth of August, and September, and beste sown in the moneth of Aprill, either alone in beddes, or aboute the borders of the new beddes of other hearbes. And it cannot aptly be sown in anye other time of the yeare, yet maye the plante after the comming vp, be verie well remoued in any time (in a manner) of the yeare, and the seedes ought to be gathered but halfe ripe, leasse they otherwise fall out of the huskes. And the hearbe with the seedes, after the plucking vp, must be layde together on a heape for the space of two or thre dayes, that the seedes may so come vnto their full ripenesse. And when time so serueth, then maye you rub the seedes forth on a linnen cloth, for otherwise you can not aptly come by them. And the seedes thus had, may wel be kept for two yeares. And the Buglosse, whyche the Romaines name the Dre tong, and with vs Langdebæse, hath the like order in sowing and vsing of the seedes, which the Borage hath. And yet some write, it iogeth to be sown in an open and sunnie place, and that the earth be well laboured and dressed befoze, for so it prospereth the better. And the Buglosse also for his singular vertues, deserueth in all Gardens to be sown, as a right necessarrie herbe.

The Phisicke helpes.

Borage, which of Galen and Dioscorides is named the Buglosse, is hote and moyste in the first degree. Which the selfe same Galen writteth (writing) that the Buglosse is of moyste and temperate hotesnesse, so that put into wine in the drinking, causeth gladnesse & mirth. And the Borage boyled in wine, and drunke, doeth engender good bloud. And those which be pained with the giddinesse of the heade, let them take the iurce of this hearbe, and mixing the same with sugar, drinke therof, whych doth thoroughly help the same. And agaynst the trembling and panting or beating of the harte, take the sirup of

P. III.

the

mont  
april  
seedes half ripe  
seedes ripe

in the first degree  
good bloud  
part from the

# 110 Secretes in sowing and planting

the iuyce of Bozage, and mixing the same with sugar, and the boxes of the Hartes hearte, which often vled doth helpe the same. And the iuyce of the hearbe with Sence, if the same shall be mixed with the sirup of Bozage, and drunke morning and evening, doth encrease the senses, and putteth away melancholy. And the rawe flowers eaten, do cause good blood, and put away the trembling of the hart, and they do the like effect, if the flowers be drunke in wine. And the sirup of Bozage is vled against the kings euill, and the flowers drie & kepte but a yeare, doe serue all those diseases, which the herbe it selfe helpeth. And the flowers put in oyle Olive, and set in the Sunne, for a tyme with the whiche annointing the stomacke and region of the heart, it doth greatly comfoit. And the distilled water (in Balneo Maria) of the herbe and roote drunke morning and evening, to þ quantity of two or three ounces at a time, doth put away the gripings & swellings of the bellie, helpeth the bloudy fluxe, and the hardnesse of fetchng winde. And the same in like order drunke, doth comfoit the heart and brain, and encrease the memorie & witte, purgeth þ bloude, and putteth away frennesse. And linnen clothes wet in that water, and layde to any place, where eyther Spyder or Waspe hath venomd, doth take away the paine thereof. And a redde Sarcenet wet in the water, and layde on the eyes, doth take away the paine of them, and cleareth them. And the distilled water of the flowers drunke, doth helpe al the abovesayd diseases which the herbe doeth, yet the same is the moze precious, which doth purge the bloude, putteth away melancholye, and doth marueylously purge the heart. And the same water helpeth vnto al distillations of the head, by drinking euery evening vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time. And it pzeuareth also against burning Agues, and the Jaundise, and cooleth besydes the Liuer, by either drinking, or wetting clothes in the same, and so applyed often on the region of the Liuer. And now the Buglosse hath the same vertues which the Bozage hath, and is hote and moist in þ first degree. And the Buglosse also drunke in wine, doth helpe suche diseased in the Lungs, troubled with a drie cough, and boyled in water and hony mixed together (as Galen writteth) doth help such coughing throught the roughnesse of the throate. And the Buglosse steeped in wine and tempered with Millecraine, and after drunke, doth cause mirth, and often drunke in wine, doth purge the redde chollet proceeding of ouermuch heate. And drunke in the same maner, doth help the cardiack passion, and it doth also put away the hurtful humours of the Lungs. And the iuyce drunke with warme water, doth take away the swelling of the feete. And the wine in which the Buglosse shall be steeped, drunke, doth maintayne a good memorie. And þ same drunke with wine, doeth comfoite the hearte, and engendereth good blood. And the distilled water drunke morning and evening, vnto þ quantity of two or three ounces at a time with sugar, doth help those diseased with the bloudie fluxe, the hardnesse of fetchng winde, and the bestraught of minde, and hauing a weak braine, and the same water helpeth against all hote sicknesses, the Agues, the diseases of the

1. Kinges euill

2. heades fluxe  
 3. winde  
 4. frennesse  
 5. paine

6. jaundise  
 7. liuer

8. cough  
 9. throate

10. feete

the

the lungs, the Liver, and the milke, it purgeth also the blood, and putteth away the pricking of the heart and stomack. And the water of the Buglosse, putteth away the Jaundise, clenseth the Leaperie and scab, and mitigateth the distillings of the heade, and it ceaseth the pain and burning of the eyes, if linnen clothes dipped in the water, be applyed cyther to the foreheade, or eyes: and in the same manner applyed, it doth take away the ringing or sounde of the eares. And y<sup>e</sup> floures of the Buglosse distilled in Balneo Mariae, do yecld a precious water to comfort the heart and braine, being drunke cyther with powder of pearles, or with the confectiō of Marcus Christi, made with pearles. These hyertherto of the properties both of Bozage, and Buglosse,

hand printed  
Laudible  
Leyre  
noise

Of the ordering and care of the Rose-  
marie. Cap. xliij.

And firste the Rosemarie is a plante of a pleasant sauoure, which for the beautie and smell of it, is set (at this daye) in Gardens. And the Gardners also in our time, do make diuers seates, some like to benches, and other proper formes (as lyketh them best, to be delighted at) in their beddes, running of length and of height. And the same plant also in medicine, hath a maruellous efficacy. And Dioscorides nameth it the Garlād Rose, for that in times past they made Garlands therof. And named also of the Greke Authours Libanotis, for that the leaues and roote of the Rosemarie, do sauour likest to the Frankensence. And the Rosemarie hath a hoarie and harde walke downewarde, and in the vpper parte the leaues of it be sharp, and both graine aboue, and white vnder the leaues. And the floure of it is blewish like to the Lauender, and hath a swete smell, sauoring like to Turpentine, or Frankincense. And it hath also a blacke roote, full of little bzaunches shooting out of it. And may be set in any ground, being wel laboured and dressed befoze, but it rather togeth to be planted in a rotten earth, and dugged with shæpes dung.

mint

white earth  
Beyre

The Phisicke helps.

Rosemary heateth and dryeth in the second degree, & hath the vertue of softning, digesting, cutting asunder, and clenning. And now  
the



Of the ordering and care, of the hearbe  
Germander. Cap. xlv.

And firſte the herbe Germander, whiche of the Latines is  
named the little lowe Dike of the Earth, is a plant verye  
ſhort: which as Dioſcorides describeth: it excēdeth not (in the  
growth) aboue a ſpan highe, bearing ſmall leaues, dented in  
like to the Dike leaues, bitter in taſte, bearing purple floure, &  
y very ſmall. And it alſo groweth of the own accord, in rough  
and ſtony places, but at this daye the herbe is planted in Gar-  
dens. And the ſēdes ought then to be gathered, when the herb  
beareth floure, which is about the end of Mape, as Galen and  
Macer do write.

deceit  
in high

may feed

The Phiſick helpes.

Richard Green

The herbe hath the vertue of heating, and drying together, vnto  
the thirde degrec, and taketh away the hardenelle of the Splene or  
milt, cauſeth vrine, moueth the tearmes, helpeth the diopſie (& thus)  
if in the beginning of the ſickneſſe, the patient drinke of the decocti-  
on of the herbe in wine thrice a day. And the herb bearing the ſours,  
doth greatly helpe bruſed members, if they be waſhed with y ſame,  
or drinke of the decoction of it. And the herbe bruſed and layde on the  
fiſtulas, in the corners of the eyes, or if oyle made of the herbe, bee  
dropped into them, doeth forthwith heale them, ſo that the patient  
be a man of a colde complexion, this helpeth. But being a perſon of  
a hotte and drye complexion, this helpeth not. And the herbe ſodden  
in wine and drunke, doth put away the kings euil. And the Germander  
ſodden in wine, with Fenel ſcedes and Sence doth greatly helpe  
the ſtopping of the liuer and milt, and if Barceyl ſcedes be put ther-  
to, then the ſame helpeth the ſtrangurie, and ſtone. . . . And the herbe  
boyled in wine and layde hot on the pallie members, doth helpe the.  
The herbe bruſed with Oyle Olive, and laide vnto woundes, doeth  
heale them. And the greene hearbe boyled in Conduit water and  
drunke, doth helpe the crampe and palfie. And the ſame decoction  
drunke, doth helpe thoſe diſeaſed with the cough, the hardneſſe of y  
milt, the ſtraightneſſe of making water, and the water betwene the  
ſkinne and fleſhe. And the herb ſodden in wine, and drunke, doth pre-  
uaile againſt popſons, and the ſame layde playſterwiſe, doeth helpe  
the bite of venemous beaſtes and wormes. And the herbe boyled in

splen  
terre  
droppie  
bruised members  
fiſtula  
kings euil  
milt  
ſtone  
palfie  
woundes  
palfie  
crampe  
cough  
popſons  
vene beaſtes

wine

g. ruy l  
 v. ruy s  
 g. warme  
 g. ruy  
 g. ruy

wine and vineger, and drunke, doth helpe the hardnesse of the milt, an old cough, and old vicers, being mixed with hony, and so drunke. And the powder of the herbe mixed with hony, doth slea þ wormes in the bodie. And against the reume, heate the powder of the hearbe in a linnen bag, and apply that on the head, which is a special reme- dy: and the herbe also helpeth the blistering of the mouth if it be wa- shed with the decoction thereof thrice a dar. And it helpeth the small scab, if making an ointment with the hearbe, and barrowes greafe: you annoint the skinne daily with it, These hi herto of the proper- ties of the Germander.

¶ Of the ordering and care of the herbe named the blessed Thistel. Cap. xlvj.

h. ruy  
 g. ruy

And first the herbe named the blessed Thistel, is very well knownen, and of great vse in medicine, and hath a speciall efficacy against poysons, the plague and diseases of the harte: And both the name and forme of the herbe, do declare it to be a kinde of Thistel, although there hath bene a greate contro- uersie amongst the auintient Phisitions, of the true description of the herbe. And Ruellius seemed moze exactlye and better to haue iudged of this hearbe, and come nearer to a truth, who describeth the blessed Thissell, to haue a big stalke and prick- ling, like to the Endiue, with rough and crisped leaues, & bea- ring a yealowe floure, and delighteth to be sowed in a fat erth, in the Garden.

fat.

The Phisicke helpes.

g. ruy  
 g. ruy  
 g. ruy  
 g. ruy  
 g. ruy

The blessed Thistel hath the nature, and qualitie, of opening & stopping of the members, of pearcing and causing vaine. And nowe this herbe in the eating, doth helpe the paines of the head & lungs, and causeth good hearing. And it sharpeneth both the witte and me- mozie, and putteth away giddinesse, also it comforteth the braine and sight, not only eating, but also annointing the eyes there with. And when the iurce of the hearbe cannot be had, then may you vse the powder, or the herbe it selfe dyed, and stieped in water, so wash the eyes therewith, and the iurce dropped in the eyes, doth help & bloud gotten in them. And the herbe stayeth the bledyng at the nose and mouth, if it be applied to eyther placc. And the powder of the herbe mixed with hony and eaten, doth cause the person easilyer to spitte forth reume and grosse humours. And it helpeth a weake ston a:ke, and causeth an appetite to meate, and softneth the hart: also it con- sumeth the euil blood and engendereth the good. And the herb bo- rled in wine, and drunke, doth cause the person to sweate. And þ herb borled in water and drunke, doth consume the euil humours, & pre- serue the good. And the herbe eaten doth strengthen the pallie giems

g. ruy  
 g. ruy  
 g. ruy  
 g. ruy  
 g. ruy

bers, and healeth the blistered lungs. And the herbe boyled, or drunke  
rawe with wine, doth breake the stone. And the hearbe boyled in the  
vine of a healthful man childe, and drunke, doeth helpe the droplic  
and plague, and breaketh all impostumes, and maistrectly the Lanc-  
ker, and falling sicknesse. And the pouder of this herbe drunke vnto  
the quantitie of a dram befoze tweiue houres be paste of the diseale  
felt, doth both expel and heale the plague. And the down coming of  
the floures layd on cuts and new wounds, doth heale them without  
paine. And the herbe chawed in the mouth doth cure the stincke of y  
breath. And the herbe boyled in wine, and drunke hot, about a quarter  
of an houre befoze the coming of the ague, and the patient after-  
ward wel couered with clothes in the bed, doth helpe all agues, both  
hot and colde. And the like doth the pouder of the herb drunke wyth  
hot wine and the distilled water, recouer the patient in short time.  
And agaynst any poyson receyued by the mouth, when the same hapa-  
neth, drinke the pouder and herb, or the iurce of the herbe, or the di-  
stilled water, and after couered with clothes, sweate wel for y space  
of thre houres. And the pouder of the herbe eyther eaten or drunke  
doth helpe the stiches of the side. These hitherto of the properties  
of the herbe named the blessed Thistel.

drinke  
in poyson  
runke  
plague  
wounds  
stomach  
ague  
poyson  
stiches

Of the ordering and care, of the hearbe Worme-  
wood. Cap. xlvij.

And firste the Wormewood, is an hearbe so well knowen  
throughout England, y it needeth the smaller instructio of  
the forme of it: yet be there thre kindes of the wormewood de-  
scribed both of Plinie & Dioscorides. And the first is y Romane  
wormewood, which also of the countrey is named Ponticke, in  
which the best groweth, and the leaues of the same the antiēt  
Phisitons minister in figs to childre, to abate the bitternesse.  
And the second is the sea wormewood, which also is named Se-  
phinum, the seedes of which the Phisitons appoint to the kil-  
ling of wormes in the body, & of this they name them (at this  
day) the seedes against wormes, or wormeseede. And the thirde  
is y which is named Santonicum, growing in France beyond  
the Alpes: & this although it be lesser than the others, yet it is  
far gentler in the bitternesse. And the same wormewood also at  
this day, is sown in beds in many gardes, & the pong leaues  
also mixed in Sallads, to the great commodity of the stomacke  
& liuer. And the wormewood ought to be gathered in the month  
of July, at what time the seedes appeare to be dzyed in y shadow:

ponticke  
July

of the ordering and care of the herbe <sup>July</sup> The

The Phisicke helpes.

The wormewoode is hot in the first degree, and drye in the third, astringent, and endued together with a bitter and sharpe qualitie, & the iurce of the hearbe is much hotter, And now the iurce drunk for tenne daies together, vnto the quantitie of foure drams at a tyme, and tempered with Sugar, doeth helpe the Jaundise, the water betwene the skinne, and driueth forth manye noysome humozs of the liuer and milte. And the wormewood doth comfort both the stomacke and liuer, and moueth an appetite to meate, and helpeth also those diseases proceeding of a stopping, like as the dropsie, and such lyke diseases. And it killeth the wormes in the belly, and doth mightily expell them, by wearing a playster prepared after thys manner: first take foure ounces of the wormewood, halfe an ounce of Euphorbium, one ounce of the Harts horne burnt, and to these mixe an ounce of a Hares gaule, and honny, which prepare in plaister forme, and apply to the belly. And he which is sicke of an Ague a long time, let him drink the iurce of the wormewood tempered with sugar, which doth helpe the ague in short time after. And if any be so payned with the headache, that he cannot sleepe nor reste, let him cause the wormewood to be finely brused and boyled wel in water, and put after into a fine linnen cloth, apply the same gently about the heade, and it wil both remoue the beating paines, and cause the patient sweetely to sleepe. And boyled in wine and drunke each day vnto the quantitie of foure ounces at a time, doth preserve the person, that the blood putrifieyth not in the body. And the oyle of wormewoode dropped in the eares, doth restore hearing. And the wormewood boyled in vineger doeth amend the euil sauour of the mouth, if the mouth be washed therewith. And the drinking therof doth put away y<sup>e</sup> swellings of the milte. And the wormewood boyled in oyle Olive and annoynted about the brest, doth both helpe the weakenesse of stomacke, and the malice of the liuer. And the iurce of the wormewood, boyled with the iurce of Borage, and the floures of Lentuarie, in Goates whey, and drunk, doth helpe those diseased of the ague, and griefes of the milte. And the wormewood sodden in lye with Sothernwood, doth help the shedding of the haire. And for rawnesse of the stomacke take wormewood and herbe Grace, of echa like waighte, and to these mixe a little pepper, beating them together, and boyling them in wine, drinke of same, which doth greatly comforte the stomacke and purgeth it: And the wormewood layde among clothes, doth drive away mothes, and the often sinelling vnto wormewood procureth sleepe, or laying y<sup>e</sup> same vnder the bolster, the partie not knowing therof. These hitherto of the properties of the wormewood.

g. worme  
 g. stomack  
 g. dropsie  
 g. worme  
 g. ague  
 g. headache  
 g. hearing  
 g. mouth  
 g. milte  
 g. liuer  
 g. ague  
 g. shedding  
 g. stomack  
 g. mothes  
 g. sleepe

... of ...



¶ Of the ordering, care, and secreats of the  
Sothernwood. Cap. xlviii.

And firste of the Sothernwood be two kindes, as Plinie and Dioscorides write, the one growing on the plaine, the other on the mountaine, and this they also meane to be the female, and the other the male, and bothe having a bitternesse like to the Wormewoode. And nowe the female (after Dioscorides) shooteth vp in stalke lyke a kinde of tree, and soz that named of many, y little Cypresse tree, bearing little white leaues about the small boughs oz bzaunches, and those finely parted, like to the sea wormewoode, and having bigge yealowe berries in the toppe, whose sauour yealdeth somewhat vnpleasant and bitter in taste. And the male beareth not so white leaues, being bzaunched, with a small seede, and leafe like to the Fennel, shorter of growth, bearing in the toppe a yelowishe floure, and having like to the berries, hanging thicke together on the toppe, and sauouring somewhat strong, and with one roote growing uere in the earth. And neither of them can abide the long colde of the Winter, but that it withereth, and is muche harmed also by the long heate of the Sunne, when the same spreadeth it selfe in the toppe. And Theophrastus writeth, that it better prospereth, being set with the roote, oz in bzaunches slipped off, than sowne in the seede.

*l. 112*

*white leaves  
berries yellow*

*root*

The Phisicke helps.

The Sothernwood is hote in the firste degree and drye in the seconde, but Aegineta writeth, that it heateth and dryeth in the thurd degree, and hath the vertue of digesting & cutting asunder, although it doeth a little binde. And nowe the Sothernwoodte burned and brought to powder, and tempered with the oyle of Raddishe, & with the same annoynting the balde place of the head, doe cause the haire to growe. And the iuyce of the hearbe mixed with the oyle of Tyl, doeth the like, in causyng haire to growe in any place of the bodie. And the same hearbe doeth resoluue impostumes and feruaticke humours, being boyled in a pot with the kernels of Quinces, and so applyed. And the iuyce pressed out of the Sothernwood, and drunke

*hair growe*

*no perils*

*Dis.*

*with*

110 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

1. Ague  
 2. ...  
 3. ...  
 4. ...  
 5. ...  
 6. ...  
 7. ...  
 8. ...  
 9. ...  
 10. ...  
 11. ...  
 12. ...  
 13. ...  
 14. ...  
 15. ...  
 16. ...  
 17. ...  
 18. ...  
 19. ...  
 20. ...  
 21. ...  
 22. ...  
 23. ...  
 24. ...  
 25. ...  
 26. ...  
 27. ...  
 28. ...  
 29. ...  
 30. ...  
 31. ...  
 32. ...  
 33. ...  
 34. ...  
 35. ...  
 36. ...  
 37. ...  
 38. ...  
 39. ...  
 40. ...  
 41. ...  
 42. ...  
 43. ...  
 44. ...  
 45. ...  
 46. ...  
 47. ...  
 48. ...  
 49. ...  
 50. ...  
 51. ...  
 52. ...  
 53. ...  
 54. ...  
 55. ...  
 56. ...  
 57. ...  
 58. ...  
 59. ...  
 60. ...  
 61. ...  
 62. ...  
 63. ...  
 64. ...  
 65. ...  
 66. ...  
 67. ...  
 68. ...  
 69. ...  
 70. ...  
 71. ...  
 72. ...  
 73. ...  
 74. ...  
 75. ...  
 76. ...  
 77. ...  
 78. ...  
 79. ...  
 80. ...  
 81. ...  
 82. ...  
 83. ...  
 84. ...  
 85. ...  
 86. ...  
 87. ...  
 88. ...  
 89. ...  
 90. ...  
 91. ...  
 92. ...  
 93. ...  
 94. ...  
 95. ...  
 96. ...  
 97. ...  
 98. ...  
 99. ...  
 100. ...

wine, doth defend the person from the Apoplexi. And the iuice anoint-  
 ed on palse members, doth help them. And the Southernwood boy-  
 led with oile Diuine, and annointing the heade therewith, doth take  
 away the vntemperate coldnesse of the heade. And boyled with wine  
 and sugar, and dzunke, doth heate the stomacke. And the hearbe boi-  
 led with Barceley and sugar, and dzunke, doth both breake and expel  
 the stone of the kidneis, and bladder. And the oyle of Southernwood  
 annoynted beneath the nauil, doth cause vyne. And the hearbe dzunk  
 in wine, helpeth against poysons. And dzunk in wine, helpeth against  
 the bite of venomous beastes or woymes. And if any often dzinketh  
 of the roote of the hearbe, it killeth the woymes in the bodye, if the  
 iuyce of the hearbe be mixed with a little milke, and dzunke, it doth  
 the like. And against the colde griefes of the lungs and breste, the  
 hearbe is profitably giuen, being sodden before wyth Ifope in wine  
 and water, & sweetned both with licozas and sugar. And the hearbe  
 bzused with oyle and salt together, and laide on Pulses of the hand,  
 is a profitabile remedie against the ague. And a bzaunch of the herb  
 (as Plinie writeth) laide vnder the bolster, doeth moue the desire to y  
 veneral acte, & doth also greatly auaille against al bewitchings, whi-  
 che by so eating is hundzed. These hitherto of the properties of the  
 Southernwood.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the hearb  
 Sauge. Cap. xlix.

1. ...  
 2. ...  
 3. ...  
 4. ...  
 5. ...  
 6. ...  
 7. ...  
 8. ...  
 9. ...  
 10. ...  
 11. ...  
 12. ...  
 13. ...  
 14. ...  
 15. ...  
 16. ...  
 17. ...  
 18. ...  
 19. ...  
 20. ...  
 21. ...  
 22. ...  
 23. ...  
 24. ...  
 25. ...  
 26. ...  
 27. ...  
 28. ...  
 29. ...  
 30. ...  
 31. ...  
 32. ...  
 33. ...  
 34. ...  
 35. ...  
 36. ...  
 37. ...  
 38. ...  
 39. ...  
 40. ...  
 41. ...  
 42. ...  
 43. ...  
 44. ...  
 45. ...  
 46. ...  
 47. ...  
 48. ...  
 49. ...  
 50. ...  
 51. ...  
 52. ...  
 53. ...  
 54. ...  
 55. ...  
 56. ...  
 57. ...  
 58. ...  
 59. ...  
 60. ...  
 61. ...  
 62. ...  
 63. ...  
 64. ...  
 65. ...  
 66. ...  
 67. ...  
 68. ...  
 69. ...  
 70. ...  
 71. ...  
 72. ...  
 73. ...  
 74. ...  
 75. ...  
 76. ...  
 77. ...  
 78. ...  
 79. ...  
 80. ...  
 81. ...  
 82. ...  
 83. ...  
 84. ...  
 85. ...  
 86. ...  
 87. ...  
 88. ...  
 89. ...  
 90. ...  
 91. ...  
 92. ...  
 93. ...  
 94. ...  
 95. ...  
 96. ...  
 97. ...  
 98. ...  
 99. ...  
 100. ...

And first the hearb Sauge is so common, that the same is  
 growing in euey Garden. And nowe the hearbe is eyther  
 sowen in the seeds, or set in small slips broken off, and wythed  
 at the ende, in the moneths of October, Nouember, February,  
 and March, in well laboured and dressed ground. And desireth  
 also to be covered aboute with bucked ashes, for so it prosper-  
 eth, and commeth the faster forwarde. And ioyeth besides in  
 a Sunny and open place. althoughe it may well abide the cold  
 of al the winter throughe, without anye cover or defence ouer  
 it at all. And it ioyeth to be sette by the hearbe Rue, or hearbe  
 Grace, and not in danged earth, but in colde earth mixed wyth  
 clay.

¶ The Phisick helps.

1. ...  
 2. ...  
 3. ...  
 4. ...  
 5. ...  
 6. ...  
 7. ...  
 8. ...  
 9. ...  
 10. ...  
 11. ...  
 12. ...  
 13. ...  
 14. ...  
 15. ...  
 16. ...  
 17. ...  
 18. ...  
 19. ...  
 20. ...  
 21. ...  
 22. ...  
 23. ...  
 24. ...  
 25. ...  
 26. ...  
 27. ...  
 28. ...  
 29. ...  
 30. ...  
 31. ...  
 32. ...  
 33. ...  
 34. ...  
 35. ...  
 36. ...  
 37. ...  
 38. ...  
 39. ...  
 40. ...  
 41. ...  
 42. ...  
 43. ...  
 44. ...  
 45. ...  
 46. ...  
 47. ...  
 48. ...  
 49. ...  
 50. ...  
 51. ...  
 52. ...  
 53. ...  
 54. ...  
 55. ...  
 56. ...  
 57. ...  
 58. ...  
 59. ...  
 60. ...  
 61. ...  
 62. ...  
 63. ...  
 64. ...  
 65. ...  
 66. ...  
 67. ...  
 68. ...  
 69. ...  
 70. ...  
 71. ...  
 72. ...  
 73. ...  
 74. ...  
 75. ...  
 76. ...  
 77. ...  
 78. ...  
 79. ...  
 80. ...  
 81. ...  
 82. ...  
 83. ...  
 84. ...  
 85. ...  
 86. ...  
 87. ...  
 88. ...  
 89. ...  
 90. ...  
 91. ...  
 92. ...  
 93. ...  
 94. ...  
 95. ...  
 96. ...  
 97. ...  
 98. ...  
 99. ...  
 100. ...

Sauge healeth in the fyrst degree, and dzietly in the seconde, and p  
 leaues (for the vse of medicine) maye wel bec kepte for a yeare. And  
 nowe the Sauge sodden in wine and dzunke, doeth stay the excessiu  
 fluxes; and the termes staying, it dzaweth them downe, but to muche  
 runninge

runnyng, it stayeth them. And the Saugc sodden with Wormewood, and dzunke, doeth stave the bloody fluxe. And the leaues and stalkes sodden together, and dzunke, do prouoke vyne, and the termes. And the Saugc sodden in wine, and either dzunke or applied plaisterwise, doth helpe the palley. And sodden in water, helpeth the goule, and falling sicknesse, and especiallre the dropping of the vyne, becynge dzunke and applied plaisterwise to the belly. And a fomentation applyed with the licour of the decoction of the herb, doth help the straguric, & bloody fluxe, and clenseth the matrice. And the Saugc boyled in wine wyth the hearb named Taxus Barbarus, and sitting ouer the hote breath of the same decoction, on a close stoole, doeth so sende by the fundament fallen downe. And the iurce of the Saugc mypred with hony, and washing filthy wounds therwith, doth to cleanse them. And the leaues and stalkes sodden in wine, & washing with the same, do help the itch of the priuities. And sitting ouer the hote breath of the decoction of the herb, doth take away the itch aboute the fundament, and the Saugc water (distilled at the time of bearing the flowers) dzunke morning and euening vnto the quantitie of two or thre ounces at a time, doeth amend the defaultes of the lyuer, putteth away the cough, and sendeth forth the dead yongling. And this water doth greatly helpe dzunke and astonished members, if they bee bathed therewith: and this water dzunke doeth helpe the paines of the sides, the shaking of the handes, and the palse, and the like, if they be bathed with the water. And the water dzunke with wine, doth procure an appetite to meate, and strengthneth the stomacke, and womens places. And the same water dzunke morning and euening, vnto the quantitie of thre or foure ounces at a time, doth breake any inward impostume, comforteth the bzaine, and taketh away the distillings of the heade, comforteth a hotte lyuer, and putteth away frensinelle. And the water with Decocks dung, doeth stave the freche bleeding wound, being bound about with Housse and Lotten. These hitherto of the properties of the hearb Saugc.

Of the ordering and care of the Purcelane. Cap. Ij.

And first the Purcelane may be sowen in any time and season in a manner: yet the same rather springeth vp, when y warme season beginneth, as in the moneths of Aprill, May, & June. And the seedes may either be sowen alone in earth well mixed with pouder dust, or among other hearbs, if you will, in that they well prosper and come vp, by growing among onions and lækes. Also they desire to be sowne in a fatte ground, for by that meanes they growe and ware the bigger. And where the Seedes shall once be sowen, there will they every

termes  
 fluxe  
 vyne  
 palley  
 goule  
 falling sicknesse  
 dropping of the vyne  
 straguric  
 bloody fluxe  
 matrice  
 Taxus Barbarus  
 hony  
 filthy wounds  
 itch of the priuities  
 fundament  
 hote breath  
 cough  
 dead yongling  
 members  
 bathed  
 paines of the sides  
 shaking of the handes  
 palse  
 like  
 bathed with the water  
 procure  
 strengthneth the stomacke  
 womens places  
 inward impostume  
 comforteth the bzaine  
 distillings of the heade  
 hotte lyuer  
 frensinelle  
 Decocks dung  
 freche bleeding wound  
 Housse and Lotten

any time  
 every



Of the ordering, and care of the Penny Royall. Cap. l.j.

And the Penny Royall is an hearbe well knowen to all persons, and loyeth in the growing with Peppes and Mintes, & the female is of moze effect, as Plinie writeth, and beareth a purple floure, but the male a white floure. And nowe Palladius willet, the Pennyroyall to be sette in the beginning of the Moneth of March in earth well laboured and dressed, without any dunging at all, and rather in a moyst place, where it moze loyeth, as some do write.

The Phisick helpes.

The Pennyroyall is hote and drie in the thirde degree, and doth also heate and decoct mightily, so that it maketh the person eating & drinking thereof, the easer to cast and spit forth the clammy matter from the lungs and breast. And the Pennyroyall is then to be gathered when it beareth the floures, for that they may after be kepte for two yeares. And against the itch of the body, boyle the Pennyroyall in water, and washing the itching places therewith, it doth speedily heale them.

And sodden in wine and drunke, it doth send downe the monthly courses, and the like the afterburden. And brused with honny & salte and that layde plaisterwise, doeth helpe the pallsie and broken members.

And the Pennyroyall brused and eaten with honny, doth helpe the hardnesse of fetchyng breath. And againste the gripings of the bowels, take two partes of wine, and a thirde part of the herb boyled together, and so drinke the same. And he whych is dayly moued to much sleepe, let him take the fresh Pennyroyall, and holde the same vnder the tong, and in the mouth, & thus often vsing the fresh herbe, shall so driue away the desire of sleepe. And the powder of the Pennyroyall drunke in wine, for two dayes together, at night going to bed doth helpe the griefe of the liuer and lungs. And the powder of the herbe or seedes taken in an egge, doth help the rancelle of the stomacke, and the casting of it.

And if any by ouer much bleeding is bereft of minde: let this herb be applyed with vineger to the Nocthyris, and it will both refrethe, and restoze the person. And the rectly rubbed with the powder of this herbe doth put away the griefe and paine of them. And the hearbe brused and tempered with Saffron, and annoynted, doeth helpe the

R.

cupll

cap.  
m  
m

eye  
st

hermes  
after  
pally  
bread  
hard  
break

eye to

raw

mind by  
stomach pain

114 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

evil blcers of the body, & especially those which arylse about y<sup>e</sup> naile s  
of the fingers. And the herbe bysed and applyed playsterwise, doth  
assuage the swelling of the mit. And drunke warme in wine, doth  
helpe the dropping of the bladder: and the same wine with the herbe  
boyled in oyle, and applyed to the bell, doth w<sup>o</sup>rke the same effect.  
And the pennyroyall sodden in wine, and applyed twice or thrice to  
Roserhills, doth helpe the reume and distilling of the heade. And the  
wine of the decoction of the herbe, and dye tigs drunke, doth helpe  
the cold cough, proceeding of clamme and watterie humours. These  
hitherto of the properties of the Pennyroyal.

Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the Arti-  
chookes. Cap. liij.

**W**hen first the Artichocke groweth like in the heade unto y<sup>e</sup>  
A pine apple: which ought to be sown or set in the earth in  
the moneth of March. Palladius willeth the earth before to be  
wel dunged & labored, for that it better ioyeth in a fat ground.  
And the seedes set in fast grounde, do greatly auayle agaynst  
the casting vp of the Mole and other beastes, in that they can-  
not so easily make hoales in the grounde. And Palladius also  
willeth, that when your beddes be thus dyessed and prepared  
in a readinesse, that then to set the seedes in the earth halfe a  
fote asunder: and this especiallye oughte to be done in the in-  
crease of the Mone: and that holding the seedes with thre of  
your fingers, you sette them so deepe in the earth (as unto the  
first ioynts) and couer them lightly with earth, and water the  
often, if a hote season ensue. For by that meanes they sende  
forth both tenderer and fuller fruites, as Varro writeth. And  
when the yong plants be some what sprong vp, then oughte  
they dayly to be wceded, and their withered leaues plucked a-  
way, and to be well dunged about with stoe of ashes, after y<sup>e</sup>  
minde of Columella. For that the same kinde of dung (as hee  
writeth) is aptest, and best agreeth to this hearbe. And bee-  
ware you set not the seedes turned vpside downe in the earth,  
for on such wise they will sende forth feeble, crooked, and verye  
small Artichokes, as writeth Palladius. And the Artichokes  
will growe without prickles, if that the sharp endes be pres-  
sed downe, or made blunt by rubbing them on a stone, before  
the

v. r. r. s.  
with  
Drooping  
bladder  
v. r. r. s.

man's  
part

half foot  
and more

wceded  
withered leaues  
plucked of

ashes

be ware you set  
not the seedes

turned vpside  
downe

the

the setting in the earth. And certaine writers affirme, that if y<sup>e</sup> upper skin of the roote of the Lettuce be pared of, and that the roote afterwarde be slyed into very small peeces, and that into ech pece cut, a seede be put, and so covered in the earth, of such a depth abovesayde, which after will grow without p<sup>r</sup>ickles: & they will grow swete and pleasaunt, if that the seedes (thre dayes befoze) be steeped in anye swete smelling lycour, and after the drying in the ayre, set so deepe in the earth as abovesayde. For by that meanes they sende forth Artichokes of the same taste (which the licour was) in which the seedes were soaked: and of this they wil favour and taste of the Bayes, if that you keepe the seedes with Bay leaves, or put of the seedes into Bay berries, and set them into the grounde. And a practise may be vsed (if you will) in the ordering on such wise, of all o<sup>r</sup> ther seedes. And to make Artichokes also grow swete in tast, infuse the seedes befoze, in cyther milke with hony, or in water with sugar, or else in pleasant wine, and after the drying, sette them orderly in earth. And many do cover the leaves wel with the earth in the beginning of Winter, to cause them to tourne white, and to take awaye their bitternesse, the better to serue with meates in the Winter time. And Palladius affirmeth of experience, that the yong plants of the Artichokes: set among yong wheate in the end of October, to growe up with y<sup>e</sup> same, will the better prosper, than by the setting of them in beddes alone. And certaine auncient men wil, that the whole plantes be plucked by, with the endes of the rootes left in the earth, or cut off in the ends with some sharp hooke, and that those rootes so cut or broken off, be dipped in dung, and set againe in earth well laboured and dressed with old dung, a thre foote asunder, for the better increase of the plantes. And if neede so require, for the heate of the season, then to water the plants, vntil they haue sufficiently taken roote in the ground. And the Artichoks are not to be gathered altogether, for that they ripen not all at once, but ripen the one after the other. And they also are then to be gathered, when they haue as yet floures in the neather parte, rounde aboute like to a Garlande, and not

R. ff.

when

as above p<sup>r</sup>inte

seede, lye in  
swete lycour

in bayes

with a hony  
water sugar  
or pleasant wine

among  
wheat in october

like g<sup>r</sup>ants

116 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

when all the floures be fallen off, for then they be woꝛser. And euery yeare the yong plants ought daily to be plucked vp from the olde, for feare of hindring the yelde of the olde, and the yōg new sette in other places further asunder. And there be some Authoꝛs whiche will, that the yong plantes be plucked vpp, with some parte of the roote. And those plantes which you pꝛe- serue for seedes, ought first to be clenſed from al the yong ones growing about, & couered ouer with some potsharde oꝛ barke, for that the seeds through the burning of the Sunne, & shoures of the raine corrupting, do vtterly perissh and come to nothing. And the Mice and Rats do greatly couet to feede on the rootes of the Artichokes, and if they once taste of the rootes, oꝛ other- wise be moued to come vnto them, then gather they after in greate companies vnto the place, and that comming a greate way off, so much do they delight in the sauour and tast of those rootes. Wherefoꝛe, to auoyde the resoꝛte & coꝛning of them vnto the rootes, then take ( as Varro willeth ) either swines dung, lapping the same about the rootes, oꝛ els fig ashes, strawing the in like soꝛte about the rootes, which so will dꝛiue them away.

The Phisicke helps.

The Artichok eaten raw, doth amende the sauour of the mouth, and the prickle partes like to the Pine apple kernels, sodden tender and boyled after with butter and vineger, and seasoned with salt, be greatly commended. And some delighte in eating of them rawe, and finde a pleasantnesse in the eating, if they be prepared with pepper, salt, and the fine powder of Coliander seedes strawed vpon. And stie- ped in wyne, oꝛ rather sodden in wine, and eaten, doth not only moue oꝛ cause vꝛine, but procure the veneriall act. And the same sodden in water and eaten, doth strengthen the stomacke, and procure a moꝛe earnest desire both of man and woman, by eating both at one time of the same. And Galen affirmeth, the Artichoke to bee then harde of digestion and hurtful to the stomacke, when the same is grown vnto the shedding quite of all the floures of the head, although some write when it commeth to the bearing of floures, at what time the ryper ones (as they write) do not only waxe dꝛye of moꝛsture, but hard and rough of skynne, and haue also moꝛe plentie of the cholericke iuyce. And of this they are rather to be sodden than rawe, and yet the yong ones being full of iuyce, may safely be eaten rawe, being prepared in the like order as aboue is taught. These hit herto of the properties of the Artichoke.

Take a  
mice  
writes

you may  
D. m. c. m.

Take



¶ Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the  
Leekes. Cap. liij.

And first the Leekes ought to be sown in a battle ground, and especially in a plaine lowe place, as writeth Palladius, and that the beddes be leuell, high caste vp, wel labour'd, and orderly dunged. And y<sup>e</sup> vnset Leekes, after two moneths sowing ought to be cut as they growe, for that as Columella writeth, they ware the bigger, and continue the longer. And the better also they will prosper, if after euerye removing and setting againe, the blades be cut, and how often they be cut, so often to be euen watered and dunged. And this also learne, that the bigger the heades growe, so muche the further distant, as commonly foure fingers asunder they ought to be set, and after the growing the blades, then to be cut. Also the often watering dunging, plucking vp of the weedes, growing neare to them, and the often removing, do greatly further their increase. And when you minde to haue the heades of the Leekes grow big, then befoze the setting againe, cut awaye all the small hearie rootes, and vnder the heades lay cyther pot shardes, or Dyster shelles, betwene the heades and the earth, and after couer ech head so ordered with earth, and by that meanes the heads will grow the bigger, so that you do not then water them, after the minde (of the Greeke) Sotion. And Palladius writeth the like on this wise, that whē the Leekes be grown a finger bignesse, and that the blades be halfe cutte awaye, that then ye set the heades agayne, in newe and soft Colw dung, foure fingers asunder, eche from other. And when the Leekes haue gotten some strength of roote in the Earthe, then wyth poure forked stibble, put vnder the heade, loose it so, in the earthe, that the heade maye so seeme to hang in the Earthe, and the heade by that meanes finding suche large emptinesse vnder it, wyll after growe out, and fyll that emptinesse.

And farther, if you desire onely to haue vnset Leekes, then sow your seedes the thicker together, but if bigge in the heads,

then sow your seedes the thinner, and dayly in a manner weede them, and seede them with soft cow dung. And the seedes also may be sowed, in the moneths of March, April, Maye, and all June: But remoued and set againe after the minde of Palladius, in the moneth of July, August, September, and October, will well serue the moneths of March, and Aprill following, being as abouesayde new dunged in the setting, and watered. And both the Greeke Sotion, Columella, & Palladius de wyte, that if many seedes of the Leekes be tyed vp together, and sowe after watered, then wil al the seedes in an heape together, grow vp into one maruellous bigge Leek righte wonderous to behold. And the like to this maye you trie if you will by the seedes of any other plant. And not vnlke vnto the abouesayd, may be caused, if that into the head of a Leek you put a Rape seede (the hole befoze being bozed with a wooden prycke, for that killeth the heade) and then set orderlye as is abouesayde, doth so grow into a maruellous bignesse, as writeth the aforesayde Palladius. Columella writeth, that the heade of a Leek bozed with the pointe of a wooden prycke or stiffe Rode, or else by any other meanes a hole opened without yron, and putting into the same hoale a gourde seede, in the heade of Rape seede faugt afoze, and ordering of the Leek (as abouesayde) will afterwarde grow into a maruellous bignesse. And there is yet another waye taughte of certaine others, whiche will that so many seedes be put into a thinne Rode, as a man may aptly take vp with thre of his fingers, and that set orderly into the ground. And of these seedes together will procede the like bigge plant, as is abouesayde. And Columella willet that after the sowing of your seedes, and that covered with the earth, so treade the earth close vpon them with the fote, and to do no worke after them, vntill thre dayes be past, and in the fourth day to sprinckle your seedes with water, vnlesse they be in the meane time watered by rayne, for by that meanes, (sayth he) they will sauour muche better. And when in sowing or planting, you mixe sande with the earth, then wil the leekes growe and yelde the plentifuler. . . . And to take awaye the

Wrong

strong bzeath and smell of the eatyng of Leekes, chawe then Cummine in the mouth, and the same wil take away the strog smell, although you had eaten a large handefull of the Leekes at one time. And Petrus Crescentius writeth, that the seedes of the Leekes poured into wine, doe not suffer the wine after to sower, but that the vinegre they restoze vnto the naturall taste and smel of wine, taking away by that meanes all the tartnesse and sharpenesse thereof. And Nero Cæsar, so greatly commendeth vnset Leekes, that eating of them euerye daye with oyle, shall after cause a cleare voyce to sing, eyther priuately oz publikely. And laste, this by experience is foynde, that the Leeke commeth vp, after y eightene daye sowing, & groweth vnto two peres end, and after that falleth to seedings, and so dyeth.

The Phisicke helpes.

The Leeke of the Garden dyeth in the second degree, and beareth in the third, and the seedes may wel be kept three yeares. And now the Leeke bzused and mixed with salt, and that layde on euylt pusses, doth heale them. and the Leeke brought to pouder, and tempered with the Oyle of Roses, and Vinegre, and dropped into the eares, doth put away the paynes of them, and the selfe same taken, doth help the toothache, and yet the Garden Leeke by often eating, doth harue both to the stomacke and eyes, and much more the wylde Leeke. For the eating of the Leeke doth fill the body with winde, & therfore it ought twice to be sodden in water, befoze the eating with meate, in that the malice of it is qualified. And the Leeke also draweth downe the termes, causeth vyne, and procureth a superfluous heate. And the iurce of the Leeke drunke with womans milke, doeth helpe an olde cough, and the blisters of the lungs, and y same drunke, doth help the spitting of blood. And for the casting oz vomiting vp of olde bzused blood, take two dzams of the iurce of the Leeke, with y like quantitie of the fine pouder of the gaulc, and the Olibanum, mixing them togither, which after drinke, and it doth greatly helpe. And the same mixture applyed to the Nosethils, doth stay the bleeding at the nose. And eating of the Leeke raw, doth cause vomiting, and is contagious, yet the same putteth awaye drunkennesse if it be eaten rawe, And a plaster made of the Leeke with hony, and that layde on broken oz spoyled members, doth both assuage the swelling, and consume the clotted blood. And against the paynes of the hips, drinke y iurce of the Leeke, and it wil ease the same: and the iurce doth especially heale such woundes, which be cold and putrified, if the same be poured into woundes, and eateth away rotten fleshe of the woundes.

And

juice  
 voice  
 must be  
 paine  
 to be  
 women  
 wind  
 ferme  
 cough  
 blood  
 bleeding  
 vomit  
 drunk  
 hips

And the iuyce mixed with the rootes of white Lillies, and annoynted on the hips, doth put away the payne of them. And the often eating of the Lecke doth cause headach, burdeneth the stomack, causeth the thirste, and inflameth the blood. And the iuyce mixed with salt, and layde on the fresh woundes, doth vnclose them. And the eating of the Lecke, procureth the desire to the venereal act. And the iuyce of the Lecke drunke in wine, doth helpe an old cough, and the droppe. And against the mightie paynes of the heade, take two parts of the iuyce, with a third part of honny, that drop eyther into the nosethyilles, or eares, and it will greatly help. And the vnset Leekes sodden in good white wine, with May Butter, and that layde playsterwise on the belly, so hot as the patient may well abyde it, and at the cooling of it apply another hot playster, and this do the third & fourth time together, if neede shal so require, whych without doubt wil greatly ease the collicke. And the water of the roores distilled in June, drunke morning and euening, vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a tyme, doth greatly helpe such which spyt blood, and helpeth barraine women by often drynking therof, and the water stayeth the great bleeding at the nose, if fine Cotten be dnyppd in water, and that put vpon into the nosethyilles. And the same water drunke, doth helpe the collicke Belly, helpeth the payne of the hippes, purgeth the Kidneys & Bladder, causeth vyne, and sendeth forth the stone. And the water speedily helpeth woundes, if they be washed morning and euening with it. And the same water doth greatly helpe vnto the exulceration and fracture of womens priuie places, which sometimes happeneth after the byrth of bigge yonglyngs, if they be bathed or washed with the same water morning and euening. These hitherto of the properties of the Lecke.

¶ Of the ordering, care and secretes of the Garden Onion. Cap. liiiij.

And first the Onion throught the bignesse of the heade, and number of the cartilages, with the which the bodye is included, was of the auncient husbandmen so named. And nowe as touching the condition of the ground, and maner of sowing the seedes, you shal vnderstand that the same ought to be done, in a fatte ground, labourously digged vp, dunged and watered, and the earth also neare red, as writeth the Greeke Sotion. Also the ground where you minde to solue your seedes, ought to be cast vp, and to lye open all the winter throught, that it may so be nipped and bytten of the frostes, and the weedes killed, and after that to be dunged, and that erth cast level into beds,

in which doing, pluck vp and cast away all manner of wéedes, and rootes, that you finde. And when you haue thus handled & ordered your earth, then in the moneth of Marche, in a calme and fayre daye, the winde then blowing out of the South, or East, so we orderlye your seedes, with her be Sauerye among them, for so they prosper the better, as writeth Plinie. And when they come vp, you must diligently wéede them for thre or foure dayes together, and as Palladius willet, your beddes ought to be thrice digged vp finely, and plaine raked ouer, before the sowing of the seedes. And now after the yong plantcs be sprung vp, and that you would haue your Onions to grow bigge in the heades, and not to beare seedes, then muste you breake of the gréne blades, that the iuyce maye so goe to the rootes, or else breake of, and cut away both the blades and smal hearie rootes, before the setting againe in the earth, for so they will growe the bigger in the heades, as writeth the Græke Sotion. And this learne, that the seedes sown in the waine of the Moone, come vp both smaller, and slower, but those seedes sown in the increase of the Moone, spring vp the bigger and swæter.

And this also is not to be ouerpasse, that in all the kinds of the Onions, the longer in fashion is slower than the rounde: and the reddish slower than the white: and the drye, than the gréne: and raw than the sodden: and the freshe, than that seasoned with salt, or sodden. And farre bigger will the heads be, if after their remouing, they be set againe into beds, lying open for twentye dayes before, and that well turned in with dung, and so long dzyed vntill the moysture be almoste spent, after the minde of the learned Sotion. And some plucke of the vpper skinne, leauing them bare, and so set them againe in the earth. And thus setting again, they ought to be placed a hand bredth, or somewhat moze asunder, that they may the better prosper. And those whiche you minde to eate before the full ripenesse, ought to be set in beddes where Cucumbers, or gourdes and Melons be. And in their growing to be often digged abente, watered and wéeded, for so they prosper the better, as writeth

S.

Palladius.

Palladius . And when they be growen and shot vp into high  
 stems, then must their weake bodics be stayed vp with small  
 proppes, leasse their long small neckes, bente muche dolwe-  
 wards with the blasse of windes, and the heades also often  
 knocking or beating together throught blowing of the winds,  
 shoulde so shake soz the and lase muche seede. And the time  
 also of gathering the heades, as Columella and Palladius,  
 teach, is when the seedes appeare blacke of colour. And fur-  
 ther Sotion the Greeke wyiteth, that the Onions will laste a  
 long time, if that befoze their laying or hanging vp, they bee  
 layde or put for a season in warme water, or else as Plinie  
 willetth, to be infused in warme and saltie water for a season,  
 and after laide to drie in the Sun until they be throught drie,  
 and after covered with Barley Straw: and in suche wise they  
 ought to be layde in the strawe, that the one touche not the o-  
 ther. And some hang them in the smoke, and Chimney, neare  
 to the heate of the fire, and do likewise continue a long tyme.  
 And to make Onions growe of a marmellous bignesse in the  
 heades, close to the seedes of them, with the seedes of y<sup>e</sup> gourd  
 in the best dung, and mixe the earth diligently with them in y<sup>e</sup>  
 putting into the earth. And you may cause them also to grow  
 of the same bignesse, if that raying vp the earth about them,  
 you doe lase the earthe hollowe vnder the heades as befoze is  
 taught of the ordering of the Leakes. Also you maye cause the  
 like heades, if bozing certaine holes you put into them of the  
 seedes of the Gourd, setting them so into the earth. And there  
 be also husbandmen, which wil the seedes of the Onions to be  
 then gathered, when as the pillings of the heade be halfe drie,  
 and that they be after throughtly dried in the Sunne. And here  
 learne, that certain antient wyiters (as Plinie and others) will  
 that both the onions and Garlike shoulde be sown neare to  
 swete smelling floures, to cause them saour and smel y<sup>e</sup> swee-  
 ter. And those Onions which you minde to plucke vp, to keepe  
 a long time, ought to be done in the waning or decrease of y<sup>e</sup>  
 Monc. And further learne, that Palladius willetth the yong O-  
 nions, to be set againe in Febzuarie, but sown in the seedes,  
 both

under proppes

the gate

with water

bury straw

in

high

under floures

in the waning

both sower in the spring, and Harvest. And yet many auncient husbandmen will the seedes to be sower in the monethes of December, Januarie, Februarie, and March. Also to be sown either alons, or in beds with other herbes, and after they bee somewhat come vp, then to be remoued and thinner set, as a span asunder. And if the earth in the same yeare, shall not bee dunged, then in the sowing time following, it ought to be dunged: for the better increase, and plentifuller growing. And those Onions be counted better, which be set in the moneth of August, for that in the yeare following, they may so sende forth their seedes. But those Onions be counted worse which be set Greene in the Lent time.

And to conclude, those Onions be thought to keepe the better and longer time, which be gathered and plucked vp in the increase of the Mone, and being then a calme and cleare daye, and after layde to drye, in a shadowie place. And the seedes may well be kept for one whole yeare.

The Phisicke helps.

Onions be hot and moyst in the thirde degree: and heate also in the fourth degree, as witnesseth Galen. And of this often eating of raw Onions, doth cause a rough throte, winde in the stomacke, and the headach. And the Onion mixed with honny, doth take away the griefe of an euill stomacke: and yet the eating of them, doth harme the members, for that they drie ouer much the moysture of the body, but tempered with vynegre and layde on yrics, they do then open them. And the eating of them, doth soften the belly, and causeth thur. And the iuyce of the Onion, mixed with honny, doth amende the sighte and the pyn and the web, if the same be often droppd into the eyes. And against paines of the breast, take the Onions roasted vnder rubbers, & cate them moyning and euening: which by that meanes, causeth easie spitting vp of humours, and looseth the breast: and in the same manner it putteth away swelling and putgeth the stomacke. And the Onion brused, and mixed with salte and honny, and that layde on wartes, doth make them fall off by the rootes. And the Onions brused with vynegre, if the scabbed skinne be washed with the same, doe heale and make the skinne faire. And the eatyng them rawe, doth cause lothsomeesse vnto the stomacke, and eating also of them doth take away the kincke of the mouth.

S.ii.

and

*intrag m...*

*wind...  
headache*

*pin a we...*

*Stomack...*

*warte...*

*scab skin*

*lothesome...*

612

And the iuyce of it drawen by into the nosethils; dooth purge the heade: and against the bit of a mad dog, take the iuyce of the Onion with the iuyce of Rue or herbe Grace, and hony, with the same anoint the place. And the often eating of Onyons, doeth harne the collicricke, for that they cause them to be both hotter and dryer. But the Regmaticke persons, the Onions seldome harne, for that they cutte in sunder, and consume the superfluous humours in them.

And the iuyce of the Onyon mixed with Capons grease, and anoynted on rawe heeles, or sleepey gaulcs, doth soone heale them. And the iuyce dropped into mattre and running eares, and after seething them in salt broth, with other good spyces, is then profitable to the stomache, and cause a better nourishment. And the Onyon brused with hony, and that layde playsterwise on any wounde, doeth heale them. And the yong tender Onions, eaten with hony, doe maintayne health. And the Onion roasted in the hotte ymbers, and eaten with Ryle, doth helpe the cough and the iuyce mixed with womens milk, and dropped into the eares, doth helpe the payne and noyse of them. And the iuyce of the Onyon drunke with the iuyce of fennel, doeth helpe the dzopsie. And the iuyce drunke with Rue, and honny, doeth greatly helpe the heaue sleepinesse and forgetfulnesse: and the iuyce also mixed with Reasens, and figges, and that layde playsterwise on impostumes, doth both bryake, and draw them.

And the eating of the Onyon, doth cause fearefull Dreames, especially to such lately copen out of a sickenesse. And some write that the ashes of the wilow mixed with vineger, and that layde on warts, doth get them by by the rootes. And last, the Onyon accustomed to be eaten morningly, and that yong and tender, both of labozing and husbandmen, doth greatly maintaine their health, and preuaileth y<sup>e</sup> like to them against the infection of the arze, by eating them with salte and breade; for so they lesse harne the heade. This is hitherto of the properties of the Onyons.

#### Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the Garlike. Cap. lv.

And first the lesser Garlyke, muste be sowne or set in the bridges of beas in the moneth of September and November, and rayled somewhat highe, that set in beddes it maye the lesse be harmed with Wintry waters. And therefore you shall make sundrye little furrowes in youre beddes like to suche whiche be made in the fieldes to auoyde the moysture and rayne.

And.



And in the higher places also set your Cloues (plucked of from the heades) foure fingers asunder, and not deeper than the middle ioynte, that they may the better come vp. And when thye leaues are sprong vp, then wæde aboute them: for the oftner you do thus wæde them, the bigger they will ware in y heads.

And if you will haue them big in the heades, then treade them flat doune, after the fastning and tying together of the græne blades: which you must do, when as the blades be somewhat come vp, and not growen vnto a stalke, that so the iuyce maye returne to the heades.

And Palladius willeth, the Carlike to be sowed either in Januarie, or Nouember, in a white ground wel digged and labourd, but not dungen, and in a warme day, and that the earth be then indifferent dype: for by that meanes, will the sêdes prosper the better and come forwarde. And yet

Plinie writeth, that the sêdes sowed do slowly come by: for that in the firste yeares growth, they be no bigger than the Lækes in the heades. And in the second yeare, they come diuided, but in the thirde yeare the heades be growen vnto perfite bignesse.

And further (there be certaine others) whiche wyl that the sêdes of the Carlike be sowed in the monethes of September, October, Februarie, & March and in hot countries in the moneth of December. And Palladius writeth, that if any

happen to be left in the earth, when they be ripe, then those remaining do after renue both in the rootes and leaues, & sende forth their sêdes in the yeare following, whiche may be sowed and bying forth the Carlike. And besides Palladius willeth, that

when the Cloues be thus set on the ridges of the beddes, in a white earthe, well labourd and dressed without dung, and that they be shotte vp in kesmes, which beare the sêdes, the

at theyr apperaunce of those kesmes, to treade the blades flat to the earth, keeping them doune, that the blades shoulde not into an heigth, whiche by the often treading of thê doune will cause the iuyce to returne vnto the Cloues, and make so mighty a head.

And further, Plinie, Sotion the Greeke, Palladius, and diuerse other auintient men write, that if the Cloues of the

S.ij. Carlike

*4 fingers wide*

*not dunge*

*3 yeares*

*white earth*

Garlike be set in the earth when the *Moone* is vnder the earth and the heades plucked vp when she likewise is set vnder the earth, that then the strength of the saour of them will bee so small, that the breath of the eaters of them, shall scarcely bee felt. And not vnlike to thys doth Columella write, that if the cloues be set in the beds, the *Moone* being then vnder the earth, and the heades plucked vp, at the change of the *Moone*, that the saour of them wyl be greatly abated. And the *Græke* Sotion writeth, that you maye make the *Garlike* heades saour sweeter, if that you mire the *Kernels* of the *Oliues* brused with the *Cloues*, and set them together in the earthe, or gentlye breading flatte the sharpe endes of the *Cloues*, you sette them so into the Earthe, or else in the setting you mire the Lees of the *Oyle* *Olyue* with the *Cloues* of the *Garlike*.

And *Didimus* writeth, that the strong saour gotten by eating of the *Garlike*, is putte awaye by the only eating of a greene *Beane* or two. And others write, that the roote of the *Wertes*, roasted vnder the hote ymbers, and eaten, doeth put awaye the strong breath and smell of the *Garlike*. And certaine late practitioners write, that if the eaters of the *Garlike* doe eat of the greene *Wercely*, that the same do shortly after, take awaye the lothsome smell thereof. And many of the auncient writers affirme, that the *Garlike* heades will continue the longer, and serue the better to vse afterwarde, if that they bee afterwarde either buried or couered in chaffe, or hanged vpp in the smoke. And there bee some, whiche will that the heades of *Garlyke*, be a little whiles steept in warme salt water, and after the drying, to be hanged vp, or couered, which so doeth cause them to last the longer. But in this or that maner used, they become after the setting barraine of yelde, for the more parte. And sufficient it is, that the *Garlike* heades be dyed ouer the fire, that they may not spring or growe afterwardes. And *Plinie* writeth, that those heades of the *Garlyke*, be of a sower taste, which haue the more cloues: and he also affirmeth, that the *Garlike* heades will haue no stronger saour or smell after

after the seething, then the Onions haue after their seething. And Palladius writeth, that the Garlike heades ought then to be plucked by, when the stalkes ware drye and feeble: and this especially do, in the waine of the Yone, and in a cleare daye and dry season. And Democritus (in his husbandrye) wryteth, that if you minde to driue the smax: Byzdes from the eatyng and spoyling of your fruites, and not to come neare them, then take the Garlike heades, and hang sundry on diuers bzanches of trees.

The Phisick helpes.

Garlike is ho: and drye in the fourth degree, and hath the vertue of consuming, dissoluing and expellyng poyson. And against the bite of venomous beasts and woymes take the Garlike, bzuling y same, and after apply that plasterwise on the byre. And of this named the husbandriens triacle. And against woymes in the body take Garlike, with the iuyce of the Parcey and Whites, whiche mixe with a litile vineger and pepper, and making thereof a lauce, vlc to cate of the same, with breade, oz meate. And for the chyllicke, and paynes of the reyns, seeth the Garlyke in wine and oyle, whiche applying plasterwise on the belly, and round about the roote of the yard, doth greatly helpe the same. And by eating of Garlike, a man may the safelye go into a suspected ayre, and by stincking places, bycause the strong sauour of it for the season doth put away all other noysome sauours and stinckes. And a Garlyke Thoue holden in the mouth, doth cease the paine and ache of a tooth, if the same proceede of a colde cause. And Sirapio writeth a maruillous matter, that although the eating of Garlike, doth harme the whole and perfect sight of the eyes, yet he affirmeth, that the moisture of it doth comforte a dull sight. And here learne that the Garlike hath certaine euil properties, whyche be these, it maketh inflammation, dryeth and harmeth the stomacke, causeth thirst, and larde to the skinne (in any place) it rayseth vpper blisters if it lyeth twelue houres space. And therefore the often eating of it doth harme collerick, in that the Garlike doth inflame the, and dryeth the whole body, especially in a hote season, and engenderteth beside the leappie in them, causeth also frensinesse, hurteth the sight, and moueth headach: sod in consideration hereof, the collerick ought to take herde of the often eating of Garlike, and chiefly in the latter ende of the Spring, the Sommer, and hote season of the Harvest, bicause it doth then sooner engender the red chollicke, and increaseth the adust matter. Also it doth moze harme, being eaten raw, thā sodden, oz roasted. And yet the eating of Garlike moderately in the Wynter tyme, is right profitable to the flegmaticke persons.

And further, the Garlike tossed vnder the hote ymbers, and brused

Javon

Judee

byre of beales  
woymes  
wiarle

to sooke  
paine rained

ill sauour

loot arte

figg

inflames

leppie  
frensinesse  
chollicke

Legnatio

sed with figs and barrowes grease, and that applyed ylarserwise, doth breake a colde impostume which is long ere it be ripe. And the Garlike eaten puticly awaie the inwarde swelling of the bodie, softnerh and openeth impostumes (as abovesaid) and draweth forth the matter. And the heade annoynted with the iuyce of Garlike, doth kill both the nittes and lycce. And the Garlike drunke with the decoction of the Organy, doth also kill the nitts and lycce of the head. And the ashes of the Garlike mixed with hony, and that annoynted on thynne places of the heade, doeth helpe the shedding of the haire. And the same ointment amendeth the foulness or filthyncsse of the skinne. And the ashes of the Garlike, doth helpe the bleets open, by sprinkling them vpon. And the ashes of the Garlike wrought together with hony and May butter, and annoynted on the grieved places, doth make the skinne smooth, if the same bee either infected with the scab or leaprie, so that the annoyning be done, after the bathing in the hote house. And as moche Authours do write, the often eating of Garlike, doth greatly harme and dull the sight of y eyes. And yet the Garlike sodden and eaten, doeth cause a cleare voyce, helpeth an olde cough, purgeth the colde brcast, and dryeth vbye the moylsture of the stomache. And the Garlike (with the leaues and all) sodden in wine and drunke, doeth not onely procure vyne, but moueth downe the termes, and draweth downe also the after burden, if the belly be annoynted with the same. And a smoke also made of the Garlike, may do the like, if the woman lytte ouer it, on a close chayze for the purpose: and the sauour of the Garlike, doth drye away all venomous wormes. And if any stinged of an adder do eate of the Garlike, he shall not after bee harmed of stinging: nor if he hath drunke poyson, he shall after feele no harme. And Garlike sodden with vinegre, and drunk with that and hony mixed together, named Husle, doth after sende forth the flat and broade wormes, and any other venomous worme crept into the belly.

And the Garlike sodden with oyle Oliue, and annoynted, doth assuage the swellings, and other griefes of the bladder. And the Garlike sodden with Centory in wine, and drunke, doeth helpe the drop sic gathered of a colde cause. And the Garlike byrsed with the Coliander seedes, and so taken in wine, doth assuage the paynes of the syntes, and openeth the straightnesse of making water. And the Garlike sodden with Beanes, and byrsed, and after tempered with oyle Oliue, or oyle of Poppe, and an ointment made of the same, with the which annoynting on the temples, do greatly helpe the head ache. And the Garlike sodden, and after rolled drye with Pillitorie and Wallike, & brought to powder, with the which washing y mouth, much helpeth the toothach. And if a woman doubt of the being with child, and smelleth not the sauour of Garlike, let by hir bed side in the night, it doeth then vndoubtedlye declare that shee is conceiued with child. And the eating of Garlike is good and profitable both to husbandmen, and labozers, which often eate colde meates, & meates of hard digestion. These hitherto of the properties of the Garlike.

Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the great  
Garlike. Cap. lvj.

And first the great Garlike, whiche some Authours name  
the Africa Garlike, and the Greekes Aphroscorodon, is  
farre bigger of encrease, than our common Garlike. And now  
this Garlike, doth Columella will, to be sette on the ridges of  
the beds, like to the former Garlike, and that out of one head,  
manye Cloues to be broken off, whiche ought to be done in a  
sayre and calme day, in a white earth well digged vp & dressed,  
without any dung, about the Calends of October & Nouem-  
ber. And to make the heades of this Garlike to growe bygge,  
then order the Garlike blades to come vp, like as was taught  
of the other Garlike. And in the setting also of the Cloues, re-  
member to plante them, not onely foure fingers asunder, but a  
finger deepe, and to rake the earth often ouer them in the gro-  
wyng vypp, whereby the iuyce maye runne to the roote, and  
cause them ware the bigger in the heades. And to conclude,  
all other instructions necessarily to be vnderstanded about the  
further ordering of this great Garlike, maye be learned in o-  
ther afoze taught.

¶ Of the ordering, care and secretes of the Garden  
Radish. Cap. lvij.

And first the Radish roote is well knowen both to the riche  
and poore, so that as well the husbandmen as the Cittizens  
do (at this daye) eate of the Radishe: the same befoze beeyng  
well scraped, cutte into thinne rounde slyces, and dipped  
in water and salte, the better procureth an appetite vnto  
meate.

And Columella willeth, that the seedes of the Radishe, bee  
sowen in a well dunged and labored earth, and in the moneths  
of March, April, and September. And after the roote be grown  
vnto some bignesse, then couer it ouer thicke with earth, for  
that

T.

that

that other wise by leauing it bare, that the Sunne and ayze maye worke on the roote, doeth so cause the same to become harde and hollowe, as writeth Plinie, whiche willethe the Radish to be sowne in a loose and moyste earth, without dunging. And Palladius writeth, that the Radish in no wise agreeth to be sowne either in a sandie or grauelly ground: but he affirmeth it to soy vnder a temperate ayze, and to be sown in beds, large asunder, and deepe digged in after a new rayne, vnlesse the ground be sufficiently moyste and watrie of it selfe. And when the seedes be sowne, then oughte they by and by after to be covered with fine earth, and no dung mingled nor caste vpon, but onely the chaffe of corne, although Columella contrarie writeth. And Aristomachus willethe, the leaues to be quite broken off, and pulled away in the Winter, whereby the roote may be the bigger in sommer. And the roote also will be the pleasanter in eating, if you bryake of the leaues befoze it grow vnto a stalke, as Plinie writeth. And the smaller the lease shal be so much the swæter and pleasaunter will the roote bee. And to be also watred with salte water, it prospereth the better as Plinie writeth: soz that by the watring on this wise, the roote sendeth such bitterneie as then remayneth in the same. And to make your Radish tast swæte, then after the minde of Florentine, steepe your seedes befoze eyther in water and Honnye mixed together, or in the licour of Reasins, or else in water and suger, soz two dayes together, and after the drying againe sow them so in the earth. And to make your Radish grow big, plucke away all the leaues, sauing a small stalke remayning, and after couer the same very thicke ouere with earth as Palladius willethe. And the like affirmeth Plinie, if that a hole bee made with a wooden dibble, and the same filled sixe fingers high, with the chaffe of corne, and after the seedes mixed with dung and fine earth, it will after cause so greate a roote growe, as was the bignesse of the hole made. And the thinne sowing of seedes in the ende of Iulye, and vnto the middle of August, or else a little after, and wading them often, after their comming vpon, doth so cause them to growe the bigger in the roote. And they

they also ioy in open ayre, but be muche harmed by growing in shadowie places. And if suche a drought doth happen, that you cannot aplye sow your seedes, then sow them the thicker together, in some moyste and watric place.

And when the yong plants be well sprong by, and strong in the earth, and that the ground be wel moystned with showres, then may you remoue the yong plantes, especiallye about the ende of August, and vnto the middle of September. And set them after in the earth, wel laboured and trimmed, for so they growe the pleasaunter in eating. And Petrus Crescentius writeth, that the rootes of the Radishe dyed, and those wroughte into powder, and after poured into a bigge glasse, or narrow mouthed pot glazed full of wine, and letting the same so stand covered for a few dayes, wil after be turned into sharpe vineger, which drunke dayly, doth maruelloussye weare awaye, & consumeth the stones of the kidneis, and helpeth besids, many other griefes of the body.

The Phisick helpes.

The Radish is hot and dry in the thirde degree, but some write in the second degree. And now the Radish eaten at supper, doth digest the meate eaten and heateth the stomacke, and caueth also a stinking breath if any sleepe by and by after the eating. And this roote is hurtful vnto women with childe, and therefore to be refrained in that season. And the iuyce of the roote, annointed on olde vlcers, deeth both ciclic and eate away the Cancker in them: and the same lyke worketh the ponder of the roote. And the iuyce of the Radishe boyled with hony and mixed with a little vineger, and after strayned and drunke, doth helpe the quartaine ague, and stopping of the milke. And the roote of the Radish layde playsterwise, doth help the water betweene the sunne, and such diseased with the hardnesse, & swelling of the milke. And the iuyce of the roote drunke with the licour of reasins, doth help the kings euill, and drunke with hony doth put away the cough. And this also helpeth such whych be stopped in the bzeast, and draw the winde short, by drinking therof. And of this roote is made an oximell, on this wise: firste byle the rootes somewhat, and infuse them for two or three dayes in vineger, and after put to the same a thirde part of honny, which strained, drinke thereof, for thys helpeth the quartaine, and one daye ague, vnieste the same proceede of salt humors.

¶ ii.

And

*shink broast. b.*  
*no w. radish. b.*  
*radish in vlcers.*  
*ag. quartaine.*  
*mult.*  
*kinges euill.*  
*radish.*  
*short wind.*

And if there be colde and vndigested humours in the stomacke, then  
 steepe the rindes of the rootes of the Radish in hony & vinegre mixed  
 together, and of the same let the patient dayly eat a good quantity:  
 after the same so eaten, drinke a drafte of warme water, putting the  
 your finger, or a feather dipped in sallet oyle, into the throte, and  
 thys forthwith will procure you to cast forth at any time, but the ap-  
 ttest time is in the mozning. And against the hardnesse of the milke,  
 and liuer, seeth the herbe alone in oyle and wine, and apply the same  
 playsterwise, and the same playster layde hote on the bottome of the  
 belly, neare to the rooste of the pziuitic, doth help the strangurie. And  
 the water of the Radish distilled in SepteMBER drinke mozning and  
 euening vnto the quantitie of thre or foure ounces at a time, doeth  
 help the stone, causeth vrine, and clenseth also the reines, and y<sup>e</sup> blad-  
 der. It doth clense the places also where the stones containe. And y<sup>e</sup>  
 same water drinke doth helpe the kings euil, killeth the wormes of  
 the belly, and helpeth the digestion of the stomacke, and purgeth it  
 of all clammy humours and other matters which hinder digestion, &  
 it openeth also euery stopping of the inner members, and beyns. And  
 drinke in the quantity aboue said, doth extenuate the tough humours,  
 and causeth a cleare voyce: and this water gargelled in the throte,  
 and holden in the mouth, doth helpe the swelling of the throte, and  
 vicers of the gummes, for it both resolueth, breaketh & consumeth.  
 And this water drinke mozning and euening, vnto the quantitie of  
 foure ounces at a time, for thre or foure weekes together, doth help  
 the water betweene the skinne, in that the patient refrayneth much  
 and often drinking. For the lesse the patient then drinketh, the more  
 he sendeth forth of the water in the vrine, and by that meanes is y<sup>e</sup>  
 sooner holpen. These hytherto of the properties of the Radish.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the  
 Nauew. Cap. lviii.

And first the Nauew, well beareth any ayre in a manner, &  
 delighteth in a fatte loose grounde, but it better prospereth  
 in a leane and drie grauelly ground. And the proprietie of the  
 place, doeth chaunge the Nauew into a Rape, and the Rape  
 contrariwise into a Nauew. And that your Nauewes maye  
 well prosper, then sowe them in a well laboured and dun-  
 ged grounde. And they also will well come vp being sowed  
 in those places where the cozne hath bene reaped of that  
 same yeare. And if they growe to thicke, then remoue and set  
 them thinner, whereby the other vnremoued, maye growe  
 the



the bigger in the roote; they ought to be sown aboute the ende of July, and in all the moneth throughe of August, and if they happen to lacke raïne, then to water them so often as néede shall require. And in the wadding about them, both the Pauew and Rape be muche strenghtned, and growe the better. And those Pauewes be the better, which be long and in a maner wrinkled, not bigge, and not hauing maner rotes, but one onely roote, and that both sharpe and straight. And of the Pauewes be made a wholesome composition wyth the Radishe, a little salte, Wineger, hony, mustard, and swéete spices, and wythout spyces also, the same may be made pleasaunt to eate.

### The Phisicke helpes.

Pauew is hot of qualitie in the seconde degree, and doth muche nourish, but hardly digesteth, and maketh the flesh soft and puffed vp, yet lesse than doeth the rape, for the whiche cause if the Pauew or Pauewes, be boyled in water, and that the first water be cast away, and in the boyling of the second water, the hardnesse of the substance tempered, and so they ingender a meane nourishment between good and euill. And of this, such whiche be not well boyled, do hardely digest, and cause windinesse, and a stopping both in the veines and pores. Wherefore the Pauewes be then best to bee eaten, when as they be sodden in two waters, and in the thirde seething, be boyled wyth the fatte of Seefe or mutton. These hitherto of the properties of the Pauew.

### ¶ Of the ordering, care, and secrets both of the Persnep and yealowe Car- rot. Cap. lix.

And first the Garden Persnep is a roote very well knowne to all persons, and dayly in vse euery where, whiche roote (as Rutillius writeth) being tenderly sodden, giueth good nourishment to the bodie. And nowe Palladius willeth the Persneps to be sowne in the seedes, or sette in the rotes, in the monethes of December, Januarie, and Marche, and that in fat grounde, déepe digged, lose and well turned vp, and orderlye dressed.

*descrip  
man*

dressed. And the seedes also must be thinnē sown, and likewise the rootes thinnē set, whereby they may growe and ware the bigger in the roote. And after the comming vp, they must be waded about for the better increase also of the roote. And first Plinie writeth, that there be many kindes of Carots, and this not of themselues, but of the proper places where they grow so altered. And now the yealow Carots (most sowne in Gardens) ought to be like ordered in y<sup>e</sup> sowing, as we haue aboue taught in the vsage of the Parsnep. And they ought also to be sowne as wel in Barneff, as in the spring time, and after they bee come vppe, then remoued and sette thynner, for so they prosper the better, and ware the bygger in the rootes.

## The Phisicke helps.

The roote of the Parsnep is hate in the middle of the second degree, and moyste in the first degree, so that the same eaten doth greatly profit the bodie. And now the roote tenderly sodden and eaten, causeth vyne, and doth especially profite the Melancholic. And the Garden Parsneps also eaten wyth meate, be profitable to the body, for that they engender good bloude, and the wilde Parsnep rootes eaten of women, do moue the termes. And the roote of the Parsnep hanged on the necke, doth helpe the swelling of the throte, and no venimous worme shall harme the person which beareth the roote about hym. And the seedes of the Parsnep drunk wyth wine, and applyed in playsterforme to y<sup>e</sup> priuie place (as Dioscorides writeth) doth drawe down the termes, helpeth the straightnesse of making water, and the paine of the side, which otherwise is named the flurelic. And the roote applyed playsterwise, doth helpe the byte or sting of venimous wormes. Also the roote sodden and eaten, doth caule vyne, & prouoketh the veneriall act. And the leaues brused and layde playsterwise wyth hony, doth cleanse and heale the great eating in the vicers.

And the herbe with the roote chedde together, and distilled aboute in the ende of the moneth of March, which drunk moorning and euenyng, vnto the quantitie of thre ounces at a tyme, and the pallie members bathed wyth that water, doth helpe the making of them. And drinking euerie night vnto the quantitie of sixe ounces at a tyme, doth prouoke the veneriall act and encrease the sperme of the man. And thys water also drunk, doth helpe the straightnesse of making water.

And

16m  
remov  
u. macta  
g. terruce  
o. vena  
y. subclig. pro  
y. termes  
y. p. l. am. fac  
h. v. enus  
g. p. a. g. e. y  
b. v. enus

And now the Garden Carrot, as writeth Constantine, is hot and dry in the second degree. But that Carrot which groweth of the owne accord; (and named the wilde Carrot) is both lesser then the Garden Carrot, and is also drye and hote in the thyrde degree. Also the Garden Carrots tenderly sodden w<sup>th</sup> meate, are pleasaunt and holcsome. But now the wilde Carrot boyled in wyne, w<sup>th</sup> so many figs as you thinke needefull; and dzinke, doeth put away the drye cough and the selfe same wyne dzunke, doeth helpe the harde fetchyng of wynde. And the herbe or the roote boyled in ire or water and washyng the heade therew<sup>th</sup>, doeth helpe the scadyng of the haire, procedyng of a colde cause, and thre handfuls of thys herbe boyled in wyne and Oyle, and applyed playsterwysc on the belly, do put away wynde, and heateth the stomack. And the herb boyled with Malloves, and herbe Mercuric in Wine and Oyle, and applyed in playsterforme on the Nauill, doeth helpe grypings of the bowels. These hytherto of the properties both of the Parsnep and Carrot.

roug 7  
hear [sc] 1  
wind 4

Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the Melons, and all the kindes of Pompions.

Cap. lx.

And first the Melons, and all kindes of the Pompions, desire in a manner the same earthe and ayre whiche the Citrones and Cucumbers do. And yet the earth not so fatte, nor so much dunged, wherby they may grow the pleasaunter in taste, and be the sower ripe. And all kindes ought to be sowne thinne, as the seedes put two fote asunder in the earth, wel laboured, and cast diligentlye into beddes, for that they ioye in largenesse of roome where they maye spreade hyther and thither. And they also be greatly comforted with the herbes growing neare to them, so that they neede little weeding. And they oughte to be often watered, vntill they be well sprung vpp, but after you maye not: and they be then ripe to be eaten, when they sauoure swete, and appeare yealowe within. Also those Melons or Pompions be the pleasaunter in eating, which haue farre smaller seedes than the other.

two fote  
smaller seedes

And

136 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

And there be other kindes of them, which be small, gréene, and verplong, and all (in a manner) are crooked, which be named Melons, and do also eate sowze, like the Citrones, hauing the like taste in the eating: but they be not so colde Citrons, and therefore are better digested. And if you woulde make them swéete in the eating, then let the sêdes be steeped for thre dayes together, in the swéete lycour made of water and hony, called otherwise Mulse, or in swéete Cow milke, and after the drying set orderly in the earth: for so the Pompi-  
*swete*  
 ons conning vp of those sêdes, will be farre swéeter, and ple-  
 saunt of taste. And the Pompi-  
 ons will saour and smell very  
 swéete, if the sêdes be layde for a good whyles among Rose  
 leaues, and that those leaues mixed with the sêdes, be so put  
 into the earth, or otherwise the sêdes be eyther steeped in  
 Rose water, or in some other pleasaunte swéete water, and  
 then sette (after the drying in the shadowe) into the grounde.  
*Cats*  
 And here learne, that Cats ought carefullye to be defended  
 from the Pompi-  
 ons, for that they greedily desire to come vnto  
 them.

And as touching the other secretes, as to make them grow  
 timely, verve bigge, and without sêdes: reade hereafter,  
 where we intreate of the ordering of Gourdes and Cucum-  
 bergs.

The Phisicke helpes:

The Melons be colde and moyste in the second degree: but those  
 which be sweete in taste, are temperately colde. And the sêdes haue  
 the like propertie in medicine to be vsed. And pleasantly doth the  
 Pompi-  
 on eate, yet very hardly digesteth, through the coldnesse mix-  
 ed to the moysture of it. And the Pompi-  
 on is then to be eaten, when  
 as the stomacke before is throughly censed, in that the same doeth  
 lightly alter into those humours, and doeth so slacke digestion, by ha-  
 uing preeminence in the stomacke. And of this we learne by y<sup>e</sup> minde  
 of the auncient men, that we eate the Pompi-  
 ons fasting, and to eate  
 no other meate after them, vntill they be halfe digested in the body.  
 And the eatyng of them doe greatlye helpe vnaturall heatcs, and  
 wicked agues. And the sêdes do purge the skinne, if the skinne be  
 washed with the decoction of them. And the Melons haue the ver-  
 tue

due of cleansing, as writeth Galen in his booke De alimentorum facultatibus: and of this they may aptly cleanse the spottes of the face, or Sunne burning, red pynples, and the fulnesse of the bodie, through the spottes of sundry colours. And the person whiche is yll coloured in the face, let him or hir take the seedes of the Melon, pilling off the upper skinne of them, vnto whiche put a little beane meale, & working the seedes into fine powder, mixe them wel together, and after make small cakes of the same with Rose water, which drye in the Sunne, and when they be thus dried, then wash the face with those cakes orderly, and they will after cause the face become very cleare and faire, and cleanse the filthy spottes of the skinne. And the seedes eaten or drunke, do cause vyne, and purge the Lungs and kidneys. And more do the seedes worke in the Lungs then in the bladder, for that a more stronger and mightier remedy ought to be ministred in the stone of the bladder, than in the stone of kidneis or Loines. And the upper rinde of the Melon layde to the sozeheade, doth stay the running of the eyes. And the roote of the Melon doth heale such vicers that stande full of matter, if the same be applyed piasterwise with hony on the places. And many do eat the Melons with vinegre, mixing with it the Penroyal, and Onions together, for so they temper the harming force of the colde of it. And the Melons distilled, which water drunke once euerye morning, vnto the quantitie of three or foure ounces, for the space of a moneth, doth greatly helpe the stone, causeth vyne, and purgeth the kidneis. Also the same water cooleth and delayeth all inward heates not vnnaturall, cooleth the liuer, and ceaseth the thirst tempered with suger. And this water doeth help a hote cough, if linnen clothes dipped in it be applyed without, and it both putteth away heates, and swellings of the body, wheresoeuer they shal be. These hitherto of the properties of the Melons and all the kindes of Pompions.

face colour. g.

eye. g.

eyes running. g.  
ulcers. g.

stone. g.  
w. g.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the  
Cucumber. Cap. lxxj.

And first the Cucumbers be either sowen or sette in beds, and in furrowes, a foote and a halfe high, and thre foote broade, and the spaces betwæne the furrowes oughte to be eight foote broade, wherby they may the freelyer speade out and runne abrode. And Palladius willeth the seedes after the sowynge, to be often watered, vntill they be somewhat sprung vpper, for that they loye muche in the moisture.

foe

watered

U.

And

And after they be thus sprung vp, which commonly doe ap-  
 peare, after the first or seventh day sowing, then maye you wa-  
 ter them no longer, for that the watering afterward doth soon  
 destroy and kill them. And here learne, that when the seedes  
 be sown, you ought then in the first or eighth day following, to  
 see if the seedes be then harde or opened, a sure note or token  
 that they may be good, but if the seedes be soft, then doe they  
 thoroughly declare to be nought.

And in this case found, you ought to set other in their places,  
 prouing againe the first day after, which finding in like condi-  
 tion corrupted, then set other in their places, and this so often  
 do, vntill they appeare aboue the earth. And they also desire  
 to be sown or set in a fat earth, well dressed, dunged, & moyste,  
 and set in the ende of the moneth of Aprill, and also in the be-  
 ginning of May. And after their comming vpp, they neyther  
 neede raking nor wadding with the handes: for that they bee  
 muche holpen with the other herbes growing neare to them.  
 And to make them the tenderer and pleasanter in the eating,  
 keepe the seedes for two dayes befoze the sowing, in shepes  
 milke mixed with hony, or as Plinie writeth, in water mixed  
 with hony, or in water mixed with Suger, for so do they cause  
 the tenderer, whiter, and pleasaunter Cucumbers, both in the  
 smell and taste, and sayer also to the sight. And the same ex-  
 perience do Columella, Florentine, the Greeke, Plinie, and  
 Palladius write. And the Cucumbers also will growe long,  
 white, and tender, if that vnder the bzaunches of the Cucu-  
 bers growing, you set either a boule or panne of water and ho-  
 ny, two hand breadth beneath them, for by that meanes they be  
 caused the like, as writeth Gargilius Martialis. And as they  
 spreade and runne out into length, so ought they then to bee  
 bozne vp with props and other meanes from the earth, for  
 the weakenesse of their bzaunches, & vnto the better growing  
 and prospering of the Cucumbers. And if you wil haue Cu-  
 cumbers without seedes, then befoze the setting dip your seedes  
 in the oyle of Sauiue, mixed with the herbe Culix brused, and  
 the Cucumbers will after growe the like. And to haue Cucu-  
 bers

bers

2 dayes

seed set

april  
may

stepped

without seedes

bers timely ripe, and in a maner all the yere, then vse the seeds in the like order, as shall after be taught of the Gourdes, and that they also be set in such vessels or baskets, that they maye afterward in the colde season, be drawen vnder the succour of some warme place in the house, and in warme and Sunnys dayes, set againe abroad. And they may also be sette vnder the close couering of the walke in the garden, from the cold winds and frostes, and from the great heate of the Sunne, and so continue all the yere through, as write both Plinie, and Columella, that Tiberius Cæsar had the like, And beware that they whiche haue their monthly courses, doe not then eyther come neare, nor handle them in no wise, for feare of hindring their growth after wardes, and as some thinke, they do kill the yong Cucumbers, by their looking then vpon them. And to haue besides your Cucumbers with little moysture in them, let then the hole in the furrow, in whiche you shall set the seedes, be filled halfe vp with chaffe, and the other halfe covered agayne wyth earth, and water them nothing at all after the doying on this wise.

all yeres

courses

The Phisicke helpes.

Cucumbers be cold and moyst in the seconde degree, as writeth Ageria, and do hardely digest, but the outwarde part of them doeth cause a perfiter moysture to such haupng hot and strong stomaches, & extinguishtly thirst, and the whole substance also of the Cucumber eaten in the Summer, doth greatly profite such which then exercise themselves with any labour. But the eating of them do muche harne the Acumaticke and delicate persons, which do no labour of body, and that to their stomaches especially. And yet the water or iuyce of them doth helpe such diseased with the Ague, and ceaseth thirst.

stomach

same

Also the meate of the Cucumbers hard within, and heauie in the hande, be daungerous to the stomacke, and of this the ripe ones bee the oftner willed to be eaten, which are knowen on this wise, & whē they be soft in the feeling, and light in the hande, then they be fittest to be eaten. and the seedes drunke in milke, do greatly helpe suche hauing a blistered bladder, and drunke in wine with so many seedes of Cummin as you may wel take vp with thre of your fingers, and brused together, doth greatly helpe the cough.

ripe

cough

And

And

And the seedes also bzused, and dzunke wrth womens milke, doe helpe the frensinesse. And the seedes do helpe those that spitte matter by, being dzunke with a little quantitie of Cummine seedes. And the Cucumber eaten do cause a soluble belly, and profitech the stomacke, as writeth Dioscorides, and the smel of them doth restore the person out of his witte. And the seedes haue a meane force to cause vyne. And the seedes boyled in wine, and layde after playwise with the greene leaues vpon, do helpe the bite of dogs. And the seedes bzused and tempered with honnye, and that layde on hote burning pushes, do qualifie the heate, and cleare them. These hitherto of the properties of the Cucumber.

¶ Of the ordering, care and secretes of the  
Gourd. Cap. lxiij.

And first the Gourdes desire to be solwen oz sette in a fatte grounde, moyste, dunged, and well labourd, as writeth Palladius. And in watering the seedes often they prosper the better, for that they much ioye, and are holpen with the moysture, although there be some which increase with a smal watering, and be also moze pleasaunter by this in the eating. And if you happen to sette the seedes in a drie grounde, then set an earthen pan full of water nere to them, putting cloues oz lisse made sharpe at the one end, and hanging halfe out of the pan, ouer the edges of it, that they may so droppe continuallye water on them, in the forme of feltring, as the wise name it. And this way also of the watering of them doth greatlye helpe in a growth. And further Palladius willeth the seedes to be set in the ende of the moneth of Aprill, and beginning the moneth of May, a thre oz four foote asunder, and in such sort, as that two of the seedes be thrust into the earth together, with thre of the fingers, and that the blunt endes also be turned downewarde, and the sharp endes standing vpwart. And that a night befoze they be thus planted in the earth, that the seedes be put into a panne of water, casting then forth such seedes which swimme aboue, and the other not the like swimming oz rather lying in the bottome, set in the earth wel mixed with dung. And they may not be set in low furrowes, leaste the raine falling, and filling

fr  
soluble

and  
b  
p

water

cap  
may

sharp

seedes



filling those furrowes, do so choake and kill the yong plantes sprung vp. And when they be well sprung vp, and appeare aboue the earth, then rake the earth, putting it well about the, and as néede shall require, so vse to water the plants. And if they happen to be set in a earth somewhat loose, then after they be sprung vp into some bignesse, the earth rounde about ought to be déepe digged vp, that the rootes may so stretch and runne out diuerse wayes. And as they growe vp still, you may make a couer ouer (of them) like to an harbour, vnto the heighth of a man, that the leaued bzaunches maye be layde ouer to gyue shadowe, and the leaues also layde on the Gourdes to defend the heate of the Sunne, may so cause them to growe the better. And if not on this wise, then may you let their vine runne along on the earth, if you list. And to this also in doing y<sup>e</sup> like shal much auayle, wherby they may the sooner send forth their fruites, and the moze stoze, if that the principaller and bigger heades be a little broken of in the tops, that they maye so cause other bzaunches to bring forth of the Gourdes. And Columella, Plinie and Palladius do write, that the sées take forth of the necke of the Gourd, and those sette with the sharp endes vprighte, and both dunged and watered, doeth after bring forth long and small Gourdes. And the sées which lye in the middle of the bellie of the Gourd, set with y<sup>e</sup> blunt endes vpright in the earth, and both dunged and watered, doe after sende forth bigge and large Gourdes. And of those do men after they be dzyed make bottels to carrie Wine, Ale, oz Beare in, to refreshe the body withal, in the trauell of any long iourney. And those sées whiche lye in the bottome of the Gourd, sette with the greate and blunte endes vprighte in the earth, doe after cause both wide and large Gourdes. And sowing all the sées togither in one hole, you muste after they be wel growen aboue the earth, stay them vppe with props made for the nonce. And if the yong plants be molested with green flies of the Garden, then set by them the bzaunches of the herb Drogany, and it will eyther kill them by lightning therevpon, oz at the leaste cause them that they increase no moze.

U.ij.

haue

or be

stg cartt

head break

bottles

flies - p - rish

haue Gourds to grow without seedes (like as was taughte before) of the Colwumber, then lay youre seedes, for thre dayes before, eyther in Savaine oyle (as Palladius writeth) or in the iuyce of the herb named Culex. And the like maye bee caused, if that the first stalkke spring vp, be so digged aboute, that the head of the same may appeare, and as it alwayes groweth vp, so to be digged bare of the earth, and this do the third time, if neede shall so require. And this also do, that as the branches spring forth, and runne a long on the earth, the like cutte away of them, preserving alwayes the principall, and this will so cause them to bring forth Gourdes withoute seedes, having onely but a soft pulpe within. And to haue eyther timely Gourds or Cucumbers, then at the beginning of the spring put fine sifted earth, eyther into an old basket or deepe earthe pan, and y same well mixed with dung, sprinkle or moysten a little with water, and after set the same abode in warme and sunny dayes, and in a small raine, but at the setting of the sunne, set the same agayne vnder some couert, and this often do, in watring it in the meane whyles untill al the frostes & cold season be past. And after that when a fayre day cometh, then set the whole pan or basket vnto the brim in the earth wel dressed & trimmed, couering & raking y earth ouer and aboute it, and after ordering the same (as afore is taught) you shall so haue y timely fruites, either of the Gourd, or Cucumber. And y same also you may the sooner procure, & with lesser trauaile & paines, if that you cut off the ranke and superfluous shotes, either of the Gourds or Cucumbers, for by that meanes wil they speedilier sende forth their fruites. And to make diuers formes like to birdes or beasts, & sundry perfit letters (of the Romain fashion) on your Gourds, or Cucumbers, then take the yong fruite of either, as the same groweth on the branches, inclosing it into a mold of the like bignesse to the fruite, in the whiche let be imprinted, deepe or hollow, in y forme that you desire to haue after on your Gourde or Cucumber, and the like shall then appeare whē as y fruit is come to his ful growth & bignesse. But further of this may

you

you learne, in my little treatise of Naturall & Artificiall conclusions, where I wryte more at large, both of the same, & the compositions of sundry strange formes of apples, and other fruites, with other pleasant (and that right marvellous) matters to reade & heare. And now to come vnto our former matter in these: if that you desire to haue long and small Gourds, then take a long Cane boared thzough, or a hollow pipe, into which put y<sup>e</sup> very yong Gourd, & let the same so hang, which after wil stretch out all the length of the hollow pipe, for that the matter which shuld runne into a bzeadth, is by y<sup>e</sup> meanes sent into a length. And Plinie writeth, that he saw a Gourde of .ix. fote long. And a like cōclusion of making the Gourdes of such a lēgth, may be done, if that you set vnder the Gourd a pan or bole of water, a handbzeadth or somewhat more beneath the ends hāging downe, which in y<sup>e</sup> next day folowing, you shall find stretched out to the water, and thus setting the vessell deeper, they wil shoote out lōger. And on this wise, you may make thē shoote out of a marvellous lēgth, without any other crafte, or practise of the like. But if you take away the vessell of water, then do they after bend, and turne vpwarde, so much do the Gourds ioy in the moysture, and other wise refuse the dryeth. And Plinie writeth, that the Gourdes doe so mightely hate the oyle, that setting a bole or other vessell of the same vnder them, in the lyke sozte as you dyd the water, wyll in the nexte moztowe, bē turned or bended another way. And if not turned on this wise, then will they bē bended, as disbeyning the oyle, into the fashon of a hooke, whych you shall manyfestly trye in the space of one nighte. And hēere learne, that both Columella, and Florentinus gyue speciall warning, that no suche person hauing then the monethly course, doe handle or come nēre, eyther to the Gourd nor Cucumber as they growe, for by the handling or approaching nēre to them, they scōne after wither and dye. And if suche also being in the like case doth then but loke on them, they eyther kil the yong ones with their loke, or cause them to growe vnplesant, or else corrupted and withered.

And

corrupted, or killed.

pipe:

*[Handwritten flourish]*

follow in other

*[Handwritten flourish]*

Green

*[Handwritten flourish]*

Book

1780

*[Handwritten flourish]*

Green

1780

144 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

And those Gourdes which you minde to keepe for seedes, lette them be hanged by with their stemmes or stalkes vnto winter time, and dryed as they hang, eyther in the heate of the Sunne, or in the smoke (as Palladius writeth) for that otherwise the seedes will putrisie, and serue after to no vse. And if you minde to keepe the freshe and greene Cucumbers and Gourdes a long time, then hang them within a hogs heade, or other vessel of white wine lees, not yet turned and soure, in suche sort, that they be wholly couered with lees.

And in the like condition and manner, you maye preserue them a long time, if that you laye them into a bzyne prepared for the onely purpose. Also the Gourdes and Cucumbers be the like preserued for a long time, if that they be haged high, in a pyppre hauing vineger in it, or at the least so high, that they touch not the vineger in no wise. And the vessel besides seruing to this vse, ought to be well pitched about, that the vineger breathe not forth, in that the vineger is so penetrable, thorough the thynnesse of the partes. And the Gourdes and Cucumbers maye beste be kepte fresh and sayre all the yere thorough without putrifying, if that you put them into the distilled water of vinegre. Which wil not after suffer them to putrisie, but maintaine their fresh estate, as hath often bene tryed, of the skilful practicioners. And besides these, if that you cut of yong ones, whiles they be yet tender, and scalde them in hot water, and after lay them forth to coole al a night through abzode, in a cleare and calme night, and on the mozrow putte into a sharpe bzyne which will so kepe them fresh a long time. And now by all meanes aboue taught, you maye kepe Cucumbers and Gourdes fresh al the winter thorough. And you may besides all these make your Gourdes laxatiue, and to purge the belly if that you infuse the seedes for a day and night, in the licour made of Rubarbe, Scamony, Coloquintida, Agaticke, and such like purges. And after this, sowe the seedes in the earthe, in like order as befoze was taught. And to make them pleasaunt of tast & smell, order the seedes in the like sort, befoze y setting of the, as you wer taught in y other chapters going befoze.

The

The Phisicke helps.

The Gourde is cold and moyst in the second degre, and the seedes do serue to the vse of medicine. And the Gourde also is not to bee eaten raw, for that the same is so vsuauerly with meate, and therefore it ought the rather to be sodden, roasted, or fryed before the eating, as writeth Galen. And nowe the seedes cleane picked from the vpper skinne, and sodden in barley water, and after strayned and drunke, doth help the diseales in the lyuer, the hydners and bladder, and the impostumes of the breast, and prouoketh vyne. And if a sicke person shall abhorre to drinke of this water, then may you make a syrope of it with suger, for that the same so greatly profiteth vnto all agues. And for the heate of the lyuer, take the iuyce of the peeces and meate of the Gourds, and temper the same with milke and vnsigre, and after dipping a linnen cloth in the same, apply the lyuer without, and it much helpeth. And the Gourds also ought to be hanged vp and dyed as afoze was specified, and the winter appproching, the seedes ought then to be taken foorthe, and rubbed with salt, that so the clammy humours may bee auorded.

And the kernels also oughte to be layde in a dry place, least the moysture corrupt the seedes. And the seedes may well be kepte for three yeares, in good efficacie. And the meate and pece of the Gourde layde playsterwise to the forepart of the head of yong chyldren, dothe so take away the inflammation and greate heate of the hyarne and head. And the iuyce of the same anoynted on hote burning Goutes, doth asswage the burning heate of the same, and also qualifieth the inflammations of the eyes. And the iuyce also pressed out of the meate of the Gourde, and the same dropped into y<sup>e</sup> eares, doth asswage the burning heate of them. And vnto the same vse, it may cyther be applyed alone, or else mixed with oyle of Roses, and so dropped hote in the eares. And the same iuyce mixed with the oyle of Roses, and anoynting the ridge bone and loynes with the same, dothe asswage the burning heate of the ague. And the same doth also help the burning heate of that griefe, called the holy fire. And the ashes made of the rindes of the Gourds, and drawed on the blcers of the shamefull place; now growen vnto a rottennesse, dothe not only cleanse but bringeth them vnto a scarr: also the ashes drawed on a burning, doth maruellously heale the same, and the decoction of the meate of the Gourde, with a little honny and nyter, and that drunke, doth loose gently the belly. And if any making holowe the raw Gourde, doth after fill the same with wine, and letteth it abroade for a space, and that on the moztow drinkeh moderately of it fasting, it doth also gently loose the belly. And the rawe meate of the Gourde dyed, and layde playsterwise on swellings and hard swellings of the neck, doth greatly asswage them. And the Gourde full

£.

ripe,

*Kidney  
in post...*

*signel  
Heat of Liver*

*Heat of brain*

*Gout  
cior*

*holy fire*

146 *Secretes in sowing and planting*

ripe, ought to bee distilled together with the seedes, and finely  
 pressed. And nowe the distilled water mixed with Sugar, dothe  
 cease the thyrst, helpeth the cough proceeding of a hole cause, and  
 loseth the belly. And the same water drunk twice a day, for twenty  
 or thirtie daies together to the quantitie of thre ounces at a tyme,  
 doth helpe the Stone of the hydneis. And in lyke manner drunk for  
 tenne days together, prouoketh vyne and clenleth the rannes and  
 bladder. And the same water also drunk, dothe qualifie the bur-  
 ning of the aguc. These hitherto, of the properties of the Gourde.

*nd m* ¶ Of the ordering and care, of the Beane of  
 Egypt. Cap. lxiij.

And firste the Beane of Egypt, ought to be sowed or sette  
 in the moneth of February, and loveth also to growe in  
 a moyst place, fatte and watrishe. And it loveth besides to  
 come vp, among running springs, but for the qualitie of the  
 ground, it greatly forceth not, so that the same be alwayes  
 watered, as neede dothe require. And it may in a manner  
 beare continually leaves, if the same bee defended from the  
 colde, by some little couer or shedde, standing under all the  
 Winter time. And nowe the place from whence the slippes  
 of the most plantes bee daily slipped off from the stalkes, for  
 the intent to be sette agayne, wyll sufficiently instructe anye  
 meane witted person, howe at times conueniente hee shoulde  
 sette those agayne into the earthe. And where at this time,  
 we doe omitte and ouerpasse sundrye posie and garlande  
 floures, with herbes profitable to be eaten, it is, for that  
 they require no other manner or diligence of dressing and or-  
 dering, than the former taught. And many also of these come  
 vp of theyr owne accorde, and sundrye others, whyche de-  
 lighte in the like order of planting and sowing as the for-  
 mer. And therefore let this treatise nowe fauourably passe,  
 which I meane hereafter to increase with sundrye pleasante  
 floures, and profitable herbes needefully to bee sowed and set  
 in the most gardens.

And in this meane tyme looke for a proper treatise (and  
 that right profitable) of the most maruellous gouernement,

use and commoditie of the honny Bees, whyche I adioyne to this treatise of Gardening, in that the same (after my iudgemente) seemeth belonging to the matter of the Garden. And this I after my simple skyll, have reduced and broughte into English, gathered first by a learned wyter out of the works of the aunciente menne of Husbandry, and sette forth, for a thorough instruction, and perfitte furniture in a large Garden. And besides these, for the great profit and healthfull commoditye to the body, both of the Honny and Ware,

whiche the Bees cunningly gather of the swete Floures of the Garden. And

of this the Bees ought diligentely to bee placed and care-

fully cherished in the most Gardens,

(:.)

X.ij.

Archiekyll 14  
unns. 63

Beans 146  
blossoms 310  
blossoms 310  
blossoms 310  
blossoms 310

10172  
L. 117  
L. 118  
L. 119  
L. 120  
L. 121

M. 132  
M. 133  
M. 134  
M. 135  
M. 136  
A pro  
M. 137



C. 137  
C. 138  
C. 139  
C. 140  
C. 141  
C. 142

V. 143  
V. 144  
V. 145  
V. 146  
V. 147  
V. 148

D. 149  
D. 150  
D. 151  
D. 152  
D. 153  
D. 154

F. 155  
F. 156  
F. 157  
F. 158  
F. 159  
F. 160

G. 161  
G. 162  
G. 163  
G. 164  
G. 165  
G. 166

H. 167  
H. 168  
H. 169  
H. 170  
H. 171  
H. 172

Four line 92  
C. 140  
J. 129 124  
J. 104  
J. 98

Baam  
Bax

Radish 129  
Roman 102  
R. 49  
S. 116  
S. 100  
S. 99  
S. 88  
S. 48

A proper knot for a Garden, vvhich may be set eyther vvith Time, or Ilop,  
at the discretion of the Gardener.

